Title
Secondary Organic Aerosol Formation From Radical-Initiated Reactions of Alkenes: Development of Mechanisms

Permalink
https://escholarship.org/uc/item/11v2n13g

Author
Matsunaga, Aiko

Publication Date
2009

Peer reviewed|Thesis/dissertation
Secondary Organic Aerosol Formation From Radical-Initiated Reactions of Alkenes: Development of Mechanisms

A Dissertation submitted in partial satisfaction of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in Chemistry by Aiko Matsunaga

August 2009

Dissertation Committee:
Dr. Paul. J. Ziemann, Chairperson
Dr. Jingsong Zhang
Dr. Roger Atkinson
The Dissertation of Aiko Matsunaga is approved:

_____________________________________________
_____________________________________________
_____________________________________________

Committee Chairperson

University of California, Riverside
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

First of all, I would like to thank my advisor Dr. Paul. J. Ziemann for five years of guidance of my research. He introduced me the world of aerosol science and the nature of research. I greatly appreciate many valuable discussions and suggestions. I also would like to thank Dr. Roger Atkinson and Dr. Janet Arey for helpful discussions.

The colleagues in Air Pollution Research Center enriched my graduate school life. Discussions we made and sharing the experiences helped me in many ways in the research. I also would like to thank the technical support staffs for helping me about the instruments and the environmental chamber.

I cannot forget about my family. Without having their supports and love, I would not be able to complete all the works required for Doctor of Philosophy.

Chapter 2 was reprinted with permission from *Journal of Physical Chemistry A*, volume 113, Aiko Matsunaga and Paul J. Ziemann, Yields of $\beta$-Hydroxynitrates and Dihydroxynitrates in Aerosol Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of Linear
Alkenes in the Presence of NO, pp 599-606, 2009, from American Chemical Society Publications. Copyright 2009 American Chemical Society. The coauthor Paul J. Ziemann listed in that publication directed and supervised the research which forms the basis for this dissertation.

Chapter 3 was reprinted from *Atmospheric Environment*, volume 43, Aiko Matsunaga, Kenneth S. Docherty, Yong B. Lim, and Paul J. Ziemann, Composition and Yields of Secondary Organic Aerosol Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of Linear Alkenes in the Presence of NO$_x$: Modeling and Measurements, pp 1349-1357, 2009, with permission from Elsevier. The coauthors, Kenneth S. Docherty conducted preliminary experiments (but no data was used in the publication), Yong B. Lim provided yields of the products in H-abstraction pathway, and Paul J. Ziemann directed and supervised the research which forms the basis for this dissertation.

Chapter 4 and 5 are currently in preparation as journal publications. The expected coauthor Paul J. Ziemann directed and supervised the researches which form the basis for this dissertation.
Chapter 6 was reprinted with permission from *Journal of Physical Chemistry A*, volume 109, Huiming Gong, Aiko Matsunaga, and Paul J. Ziemann, pp 4312-4324, 2005, from American Chemical Society Publications. Copyright 2005 American Chemical Society. The coauthors, Huiming Gong conducted the experiments involving linear terminal and internal alkenes reactions with NO$_3$ radicals, and Paul. J. Ziemann directed and supervised the research which forms the basis for this dissertation.
The products and mechanisms of secondary organic aerosol (SOA) formation from reactions of 1-alkenes, internal alkenes, and 2-methyl-1-alkenes with OH radicals in the presence of NOₓ were investigated in an environmental chamber and the results used to develop quantitative models for SOA formation. Aerosol chemical composition was analyzed using a thermal desorption particle beam mass spectrometer (TDPBMS), and multifunctional organic nitrate products were quantified using a high–performance liquid chromatograph with UV-vis detector and identified using the TDPBMS and \(^7\)H NMR. The major products observed in reactions of linear alkenes were \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, and dimers formed from
dihydroxycarbonyls. Trihydroxynitrates and trihydroxycarbonyls were observed in reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes, in addition to the products listed above. Dimers were not observed, apparently because electron donation by the additional methyl group (compared to linear 1-alkenes) reduces the driving force for hemiacetal formation. The measured yields of β-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates were used to calculate relative ratios of 1.0:1.9:4.3 for forming primary, secondary, and tertiary β-hydroxyalkyl radicals by OH radical addition to the C=C double bond, and branching ratios of 0.12, 0.15, and 0.25 for forming β-hydroxynitrates from reactions of primary, secondary, and tertiary β-hydroxyperoxy radicals with NO. The trends are consistent with expected relative stabilities of β-hydroxyalkyl radicals and β-hydroxyperoxy radical-NO complexes. It should be possible to use these values to estimate product yields from similar reactions of other alkenes. Comparison of measured and model-calculated SOA yields showed that in some cases the models provide accurate predictions of SOA yields, but that uncertainties in gas- and particle-phase chemistry and gas-particle partitioning can lead to significant discrepancies. More limited environmental chamber studies were also carried out on SOA formation from reactions of linear alkenes with NO₃ radicals. The major products were β-hydroxynitrates, β-carbonylnitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and
hydroxy- and oxo- dinitrooxtetrahydrofurans, which had not been observed previously.

It was observed that isomerization of δ-hydroxycarbonyls to cyclic hemiacetals, followed by dehydration to highly reactive dihydrofurans that can be further oxidized, can be important sources of SOA from reactions of alkenes with OH and NO₃ radicals.
# TABLE OF CONTENTS

**Acknowledgements** ...........................................................................................................................................iv

**Abstract**........................................................................................................................................................vii

**Table of Contents** ........................................................................................................................................x

**List of Figures**...............................................................................................................................................xvi

**List of Tables**................................................................................................................................................xxiii

**Chapter 1: Introduction**

1.1 Structure of the Atmosphere .................................................................1

1.2 Atmospheric Aerosols ........................................................................4

1.3 Radical-Initiated Reactions of Alkenes ...............................................9

1.4 Gas-to-Particle Partitioning ...............................................................13

1.5 Objective and Overview of the Dissertation ..................................17

1.6 References ..........................................................................................21
Chapter 2: Yields of $\beta$-Hydroxynitrates and Dihydroxynitrates in Aerosol Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of Linear Alkenes in the Presence of NO

2.1 Abstract ..................................................................................................27

2.2 Introduction ............................................................................................29

2.3 Experimental Section ...............................................................................32

2.4 Results and Discussion ...........................................................................38

2.5 Conclusions ............................................................................................57

2.6 References .............................................................................................61

Chapter 3: Composition and Yields of Secondary Organic Aerosol Formed from Radical-Initiated Reactions of Linear Alkenes in the Presence of NO\textsubscript{x}: Modeling and Measurements

3.1 Abstract ..................................................................................................67

3.2 Introduction ............................................................................................69

3.3 Experimental ..........................................................................................71

3.4 Development of a Chemical Mechanism and Model of SOA Formation ..............................................................................................................73
Chapter 4: Yields of $\beta$-Hydroxynitrates, Dihydroxynitrates, and Trihydroxynitrates in Aerosol Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NO$_x$

4.1 Abstract ..................................................................................................106
4.2 Introduction ............................................................................................108
4.3 Experimental Section .............................................................................110
4.4 Results and Discussion ..........................................................................117
4.5 Conclusions ............................................................................................138
4.6 References ..............................................................................................141

Chapter 5: Development of a Chemically-Speciated Model of Secondary Organic Aerosol Formation from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NO$_x$
Chapter 6: Products and Mechanism of Secondary Organic Aerosol Formation from
Reactions of Linear Alkenes with NO$_3$ Radicals

6.1 Abstract ......................................................................................................196
6.2 Introduction ...............................................................................................198
6.3 Experimental Section ................................................................................201
6.4 Results and Discussion ............................................................................205
6.5 Conclusions .............................................................................................237
Appendix C: Supporting Information for Chapter 4

Table C.1 .........................................................................................................................272
Table C.2 .........................................................................................................................275

Appendix D: Supporting Information for Chapter 5

Branching Ratio Calculations .........................................................................................279
Table D.1 .........................................................................................................................283
Table D.2 .........................................................................................................................284
Table D.3 .........................................................................................................................285
Table D.4 .........................................................................................................................286

Appendix E: Supporting Information for Chapter 6

Figure E.1 .........................................................................................................................287
Figure E.2 .........................................................................................................................288
Figure E.3 .........................................................................................................................289
LIST OF FIGURES

**Figure 1.1**  Layers of the atmosphere with dependence of and typical temperature (K) and pressure (Pa) on altitude .................................................................2

**Figure 1.2**  A schematic diagram of SOA formation ...........................................7

**Figure 1.3**  A pie chart of the ratios of anthropogenic and biogenic hydrocarbons in global hydrocarbon emission. The bar graph is showing the ratios of each class of the compounds in the biogenic hydrocarbon emission ....................................................10

**Figure 1.4**  A general mechanism of the OH or NO₃ radical-initiated reaction of alkenes. R₁ and R₂ can potentially be any functional group ...........................................12

**Figure 1.5**  The value of G as a function of log of vapor pressure (torr) when TSP = 1000 µg m⁻³, MWᵦₒ = 300 g mol⁻¹, T = 298 K, ζᵦ = 1 (assumed an ideal solution), and fᵦₒ = 1 in Equation 1.2 .....................................................................................................16

**Figure 2.1**  Mechanism of the OH radical-initiated reaction of linear alkenes in the presence of NOₓ ........................................................................................................39

**Figure 2.2**  (A) Real-time TDPBMS mass spectra and (B) thermal desorption profiles for SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 1-tetradecene in dry air in the presence of NOₓ. Thermal desorption profiles were smoothed and normalized to peak values ........................................................................................................................................41

**Figure 2.3**  (A) HPLC-UV chromatogram and HPLC-TDPBMS mass spectra of (B and C) β-hydroxynitrate isomers and (D) dihydroxynitrates formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 1-tetradecene in dry air in the presence of NOₓ .................................................43

**Figure 2.4**  HPLC-TDPBMS mass spectra of β-hydroxynitrates formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of (A) 7-tetradecene, (B) 7-pentadecene, and (C) 8-heptadecene in dry air in the presence of NOₓ ........................................................................................................44
Figure 2.5  Molar yields of β-hydroxynitrates formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of linear alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO$_x$ (A) without and (B) with normalization for the fraction of the OH radical reaction that occurred by addition to the double bond. In panel A, the dashed curves were drawn to aid the eye. In panel B, the solid line (yield model) is a scaled version of an equation from Arey et al. (2001) for secondary alkyl nitrate yields, the dashed curve through the yield for 1-alkenes (gpp model) is calculated using gas-particle partitioning theory, and the dashed curve through the yields for internal alkenes was drawn to aid the eye ............................................46

Figure 2.6  Molar yields of β-hydroxynitrate isomers formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$, with normalization for the fraction of the OH radical reaction that occurred by addition to the double bond. The solid curves (yield model) are scaled versions of an equation from Arey et al. (2001) for secondary alkyl nitrate yields, and the dashed curves were drawn to aid the eye ......................50

Figure 3.1  Mechanism of the OH radical-initiated reaction of linear alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$. $R_1$ represents an alkyl group and $R_2$ represents an H-atom in 1-alkenes and an alkyl group in internal alkenes .................................................................74

Figure 3.2  (A) Total ion ($m/z$ 50-500) thermal desorption profiles and (B,C) real-time mass spectra of SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-tetradecene and 7-tetradecene in dry air in the presence of NO$_x$. In Figure 3.2A, signals from DOS seed particles were removed by multiplying the $m/z$ 185 profiles (due to overwhelmingly to DOS) by the ratio of (total ion)/($m/z$ 185) signals measured for DOS seed particles in real-time, and then subtracting. Thermal desorption profiles were smoothed and normalized to peak values ..........................................................................................84

Figure 3.3  Mass spectral analyses of SOA formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-tetradecene in dry air in the presence of NO$_x$. (A) Thermal desorption profiles of ions characteristic of cyclic hemiacetals ($m/z$ 227) and dihydrofurans ($m/z$ 209), (B) real-time signals of these ions after adding O$_3$ to the chamber containing SOA, (C) real-time mass spectra for $m/z$ 300-500, and (D) thermal desorption profiles of ions characteristic of dimers. A, C, and D were obtained without added O$_3$. Thermal desorption profiles were smoothed and normalized to peak values, and signals in B were normalized to
values and 0 min ........................................................................................................86

**Figure 3.4** Real-time mass spectra characteristic of dimers in SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of (A) 1-undecene, (B) 1-dodecene, and (C) 1-tridecene in dry air in the presence of NO<sub>x</sub> ........................................................................................................88

**Figure 3.5** Calculated yields of SOA products formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-alkenes and internal alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO<sub>x</sub>. Figures show results for dihydroxycarboxylics (DHC), β-hydroxynitrates (HN), and dihydroxynitrates (DHN) formed by OH radical addition pathways, and 1,4-hydroxynitrates formed by the H-atom abstraction (HAA) pathway. The models assumed that secondary reaction products did not contribute to SOA mass and that dihydroxycarboxylics were either (gpp) in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium or (nv) entirely in the particle phase as non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, or dimers ...........................................................................................................90

**Figure 3.6** Calculated and measured yields of SOA formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-alkenes and internal alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO<sub>x</sub>. The models assumed that secondary reaction products (A) did not or (B) did contribute to SOA mass and that dihydroxycarboxylics were either (gpp) in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium or (nv) entirely in the particle phase as non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, or dimers ...........................................................................................................94

**Figure 4.1** Mechanism of the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO<sub>x</sub> .................................................................................................................................118

**Figure 4.2** (A) Real-time TDPBMS mass spectra and (B) thermal desorption profiles for SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene in dry air in the presence of NO<sub>x</sub>. Thermal desorption profiles were smoothed and normalized to peak values ...........................................................................................................121

**Figure 4.3** (A) HPLC-UV chromatogram and HPLC-TDPBMS mass spectra of (B) trihydroxynitrates, (C) dihydroxynitrates, and (D) β-hydroxynitrates formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene in dry air in the presence
of NO$_x$ .................................................................................................................................. 124

**Figure 4.4**  Molar yields of (A) total of both $\beta$-hydroxynitrate isomers, (B) 1H$_2$NC$_n$, and (C) 1N$_2$HC$_n$ formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO$_x$ with normalization for the fraction of the OH radical reaction that occurred by addition to the double bond. The dashed curve through the yields was drawn to aid the eye ................................................................. 128

**Figure 4.5**  Molar yields of dihydroxynitrates formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO$_x$ with normalization for the fraction of the OH radical reaction that occurred by addition to the double bond. The dashed curve through the yields was drawn to aid the eye ................................................................. 135

**Figure 5.1**  Mechanism of the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$ .................................................................................................................. 155

**Figure 5.2**  Fractions of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates [1-hydroxy-2-nitrooxyalkanes (1H$_2$NC$_n$) and 2-nitrooxy-1-hydroxyalkanes (1N$_2$HC$_n$)], dihydroxynitrates (DHN), and trihydroxynitrates (THN) formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$, measured in the particle phase. The dashed curves were calculated using gas-particle partitioning theory with compound vapor pressures adjusted to achieve good visual fits to the data ................................................................................................. 166

**Figure 5.3**  Mass spectral analyses of SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene or 1-pentadecene in the presence of NO$_x$. (A) Real-time TDPBMS mass spectra, (B) total ion (m/z 50-500) thermal desorption profiles, and (C) real-time TDPBMS signals of characteristic ion of dihydrofurans (m/z 223) after adding O$_3$ to the chamber containing SOA. Thermal desorption profiles were smoothed and normalized to peak values, and signals in (C) were normalized to values at 0 min .......................................................................................................................... 170

**Figure 5.4**  Thermal desorption profiles of ions characteristic of dihydrofurans and 1,4-hydroxynitrates (m/z 223) and dihydroxycarbonyl, trihydroxycarbons, and cyclic hemiacetals (m/z 225) formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-
tetradecene in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x} (A) without and (B) with NH\textsubscript{3} in the chamber. In (A), thermal desorption profiles were smoothed and normalized to the peak value. In (B), profiles were scaled by a single factor so that \textit{m/z} 223 signal for 1,4-hydroxynitrates at 53°C peak in (B) and 57°C peak in (A) were equal..............................176

**Figure 5.5**  Calculated product SOA yields (mass of product in SOA/mass of alkene reacted) formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x}. Products are trihydroxycarbonyls (THC), dihydroxycarbonyls (DHC), \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates (HN), dihydroxynitrates (DHN), and trihydroxynitrates (THN) formed by OH radical addition pathways, and 1,4-hydroxynitrates formed by the H-atom abstraction (HAA) pathway. Models assumptions: (A) all products were in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium and no secondary reaction products were formed; (B) same as (A) but dihydroxycarbonyls were in the form of non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans and so present entirely in the particle phase..............................179

**Figure 5.6**  Calculated and measured yields of SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x}. Models assumptions: (A) all products were in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium and no secondary reaction products were formed; (B) same as (A) but dihydroxycarbonyls were in the form of non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans and so present entirely in the particle phase; (C) same as (B) but the yield of trihydroxycarbonyls was reduced from 0.191 to 0.038 to achieve agreement between calculated and measured C\textsubscript{15} yields..............................181

**Figure 5.7**  Mechanism of the reactions of \(\alpha\)-hydroxyperoxy radicals formed in OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x} ...............183

**Figure 5.8**  Calculated and measured yields of SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x} ..........186

**Figure 6.1**  Proposed mechanism for forming first-generation products in reactions of linear alkenes with NO\textsubscript{3} radicals.................................................................207
Figure 6.2 Proposed mechanism for forming second-generation products in reactions of linear alkenes with NO$_3$ radicals .................................................................210

Figure 6.3 Real-time mass spectrum of aerosol formed in the reaction of 1-tetradecene with NO$_3$ radicals .......................................................................................................212

Figure 6.4 Thermal desorption profiles for selected m/z values for aerosol formed in the reaction of 1-tetradecene with NO$_3$ radicals ..............................................................213

Figure 6.5 Proposed aerosol products for the reaction of 1-tetradecene with NO$_3$ radicals and electron ionization fragmentation pathways. In this figure, $R_{12} = \text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_{11}$, $R_9 = \text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_{8}$, and $R_6 = \text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_{5}$ .......................................................................215

Figure 6.6 Real-time mass spectrum of aerosol formed in the reaction of 7-tetradecene with NO$_3$ radicals .......................................................................................................224

Figure 6.7 Thermal desorption profiles for selected m/z values for aerosol formed in the reaction of 7-tetradecene with NO$_3$ radicals ..............................................................226

Figure 6.8 Proposed aerosol products for the reaction of 7-tetradecene with NO$_3$ radicals and electron ionization fragmentation pathways. In this figure, $R_6 = \text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_{5}$, $R_5 = \text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_{4}$, and $R_3 = \text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_{2}$ .......................................................................229

Figure 6.9 Real-time mass spectrum of aerosol formed in the reaction of 1-heptene with NO$_3$ radicals .......................................................................................................231

Figure 6.10 Total ion desorption profiles from TPTD analysis of aerosol formed in the reactions of (A) 1-tetradecene, (B) 1-dodecene, (C) 1-decene, and (D) 1-octene with NO$_3$ radicals .......................................................................................................234

Figure B.1 The fraction of $\beta$-hydroxynitrate in the particle phase calculated as the ratio of the measured yield to the yield in the plateau region, where the compound is essentially entirely in the particle phase. The curves were calculated using gas-particle partitioning theory (Pankow, 1994), estimated mean molecular weights of particulate...
organic compounds assumed to be the same as the hydroxynitrates formed in the alkene reaction (equal to the molecular weight of the alkene + 79), assumed activity coefficients of unity, measured organic aerosol mass concentrations, and vapor pressures chosen to achieve good fits to the data. The vapor pressure equations are given in Table B.1.  

**Figure E.1**  Electron ionization mass spectra of (A) 1-nitrooxyhexane, (B) 2-nitrooxyhexane, (C) 1,2-dihydroxytetradecane, and (D) 2-oxoadipic acid standards. Mass spectra A-C are from the Wiley Mass Spectral Database and D was measured by real-time TDPBMS. 

**Figure E.2**  Electron ionization mass spectra of (A) 2-hydroxytetrahydrofuran and (B) 3-hydroxytetrahydrofuran standards from the Wiley Mass Spectral Database. 

**Figure E.3**  Electron ionization mass spectra of (A) 5-hydroxytetradecane and (B) 7-hydroxytetradecane standards from the Wiley Mass Spectral Database.
Table 2.1 Effects of experimental conditions on molar yields of \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-tetradecene in the presence of \( \text{NO}_x \) ................................................................. 55

Table 3.1 Branching ratios used for modeling SOA formation from OH radical-initiated reactions of linear alkenes in dry air in the presence of \( \text{NO}_x \) ...................... 77

Table 3.2 Normalized molar yields of products used to model SOA formation from OH radical addition and H-atom abstraction reactions of linear alkenes in dry air in the presence of \( \text{NO}_x \) ............................................................................................................. 78

Table 4.1 Effects of Experimental Conditions on Molar Yields of \( \beta \)-Hydroxynitrates, Dihydroxynitrates, and Trihydroxynitrates Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Tetradecene in the Presence of \( \text{NO}_x \) ................................................... 137

Table 5.1 Branching Ratios used for Modeling SOA Formation from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of \( \text{NO}_x \) ........................................ 159

Table 5.2 Normalized Molar Yields of Products used to Model SOA Formation from OH Radical Addition and H-atom Abstraction Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of \( \text{NO}_x \) ............................................................................................................. 160

Table 5.3 Parameters used to Calculate Compound Vapor Pressures from the Equation log \( P \) (Pa) = A - (0.4537 x \( C_n \)) ................................................................. 165

Table A.1 Molar yields of \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates formed from reactions of 1-alkenes and internal alkenes with OH radicals under dry conditions ............................................................................................................. 251

Table A.2 \( ^1 \text{H} \) NMR spectral data for \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates ............................................................................................................. 254
Table B.1  Vapor pressure equations used to calculate the curves shown in Fig. S1 and gas-particle partitioning in SOA yield calculations .................................................265

Table B.2  Estimated contributions of secondary reaction products to yields of SOA formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-alkenes and internal alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x} ...................................................................................................269

Table B.3  Calculated yields of SOA products formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-alkenes and internal alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x}. The model assumed that secondary reaction products did not contribute to SOA mass and that dihydroxycarbonyls were in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium..............................270

Table B.4  Calculated yields of SOA products formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-alkenes and internal alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x}. The model assumed that secondary reaction products did not contribute to SOA mass and that dihydroxycarbonyls were entirely in the particle phase as non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, or dimers ............................................................................................271

Table C.1  Molar Yields of \(\beta\)-Hydroxynitrates, Dihydroxynitrates, and Trihydroxynitrates Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NO\textsubscript{x} under Dry Conditions ...........................................................272

Table C.2  \(^1\)H NMR Spectral Data for \(\beta\)-Hydroxynitrates, Dihydroxynitrates, and Trihydroxynitrates Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Tridecene and 1-Tetradecene in the Presence of NO\textsubscript{x}..............................................275

Table D.1  Calculated SOA Yields of Products Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NO\textsubscript{x}, Assuming Dihydroxycarbonyls and Trihydroxycarbonyls were in Gas-Particle Partitioning Equilibrium ..............283

Table D.2  Calculated SOA Yields of Products Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NO\textsubscript{x}, Assuming Dihydroxycarbonyls were Entirely in the Particle Phase as Non-Volatile Cyclic Hemiacetals and Dihydrofurans .................................................................284
Table D.3  Calculated Yields of SOA Products Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NO\textsubscript{x}, Assuming Dihydroxycarbonyls were Entirely in the Particle Phase as Non-Volatile Cyclic Hemiacetals and Dihydrofurans and the Yield of Trihydroxycarbonyls (Gas + Particle) is Reduced from 0.177 to 0.025 ......................................................................................................................285

Table D.4  Estimated SOA Yields of Secondary Reaction Products Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NO\textsubscript{x} ...........286
Chapter 1

Introduction

1.1 Structure of the Atmosphere

The atmosphere of the Earth can be separated into several layers as shown in Figure 1.1. Starting from the ground, the layers are called the troposphere, stratosphere, mesosphere, and thermosphere (not shown in the figure). Between these layers are transition zones called the tropopause, stratopause, and mesopause (not shown in the figure). As Figure 1.1 shows, the pressure decreases exponentially with altitude according to the equation

\[ p(z) = p_0 e^{-z/H} \]  

(1.1)

where \( p(z) \) is the pressure at the altitude \( z \) km, \( p_0 \) is the pressure at altitude 0 km, and \( H \) is the scale height, which is 7.4 km for the mean tropospheric temperature of 253 K (Seinfeld and Pandis, 2006). The troposphere and stratosphere are the regions where most atmospheric chemical reactions occur.

The troposphere extends from ground level to the tropopause (~ 15 km), and is a region where air masses mix well vertically. The temperature decreases 9.7 K km\(^{-1}\) for dry air (Seinfeld and Pandis, 2006), but more slowly at higher relative humidity. In the
Figure 1.1 Layers of the atmosphere with dependence of and typical temperature (K) and pressure (Pa) on altitude.
troposphere, the planetary boundary layer extends to ~1 km from the ground, and then the free troposphere extends upwards to the tropopause. The planetary boundary layer is where most emissions of pollutants occurs, so its composition and properties vary dramatically over the course of a day. Conversely, the free troposphere responds more slowly to activities at the ground level. The troposphere is the major region of the atmosphere for chemical reactions of compounds that do not require radiation with wavelengths < 290 nm to initiate their reactions.

In contrast to the troposphere, the stratosphere is characterized by a positive temperature gradient. In the region shown in Figure 1.1, the temperature increases from ~210 K at the tropopause (~ 15 km) to the stratopause (~ 50 km). This is also the region where the ozone layer is observed, formed by the so-called Chapman reactions (Finlayson-Pitts and Pitts, 2000), which involve the photolysis of O₂ and ozone by absorption of wavelengths < 290 nm. Absorption of this energetic radiation also photolyzes compounds that are largely unreactive in the troposphere, such as CFCs. Most chemicals decompose within the troposphere or stratosphere.
1.2 Atmospheric Aerosols

A suspension of particles in air is called an aerosol. Aerosol particles are an important category of air pollutants because of their impacts on human health (Englert, 2004), visibility (Finlayson-Pitts and Pitts, 2000), and global climate (Kanakidou et al., 2005). Aerosols impact global climate directly by cooling and warming the atmosphere by scattering and absorbing radiation, and indirectly by acting as nuclei for cloud droplets (Ramanathan et al., 2001). The magnitudes of the impacts depend on the size and composition of the particles. The effects of size are well known and will be described below, but composition effects are still active research topics (Song et al., 2007; Petters et al., 2006).

Atmospheric aerosols can be divided into two categories based on their sizes: particles with diameters > 2.5 µm are called coarse particles, and particles with diameters < 2.5 µm are called fine particles. Coarse particles are generated by mechanical processes such as wind and are directly emitted into the atmosphere from a source. These include, for example, soil dust and sea salt. Fine particles can be divided into three major modes. Two of the modes were discovered by Whitby and co-workers (Willeke and Whitby, 1975; Whitby and Sverdrup, 1980), and another mode was added later as instruments
became capable of measuring smaller particle (Finlayson-Pitts and Pitts, 2000).

Accumulation mode particles, which have diameters of 0.08 – 2.5 μm, are mainly formed by coagulation of smaller particles and by gas-to-particle conversion of volatile compounds. Particles in this mode are the most efficient at degrading visibility by scattering light (Seinfeld and Pandis, 2006), because of the similarity in particle diameters and the wavelengths of visible light. They are also the greatest concern for causing health problems (Kappos et al., 2004), because their low deposition velocities allow them to penetrate deeply into the lungs. This same property causes them to normally have the longest particle lifetimes in the atmosphere, and thus to be a significant component of the free troposphere (Seinfeld and Pandis, 2006). Aerosols in the planetary boundary layer reflect more the local sources and geography. Aitken mode particles, which have diameters of 0.01 – 0.08 μm, are mainly formed by the condensation of hot vapor from combustion, whereas nucleation mode particles, which are those with diameters less than 0.01 μm, are formed by homogeneous nucleation of low volatility products of the atmospheric oxidation of volatile compounds. These particles grow into the Aitken and accumulation modes by coagulation and condensation of gases. Recently, a subset of the fine particles, called ultrafine particles, has been defined as those with
diameters $\leq 0.1$ $\mu$m. This is because of studies indicating that these small particles may be especially effective at causing health effects.

Atmospheric organic aerosols (OA) can be classified on the basis of how they are introduced to the atmosphere. The major categories are primary and secondary. Primary organic aerosol (POA) is directly emitted into the atmosphere; with soot being the most important example. On the other hand, secondary organic aerosol (SOA) is formed in the atmosphere when volatile organic compounds (VOCs) are oxidized to condensable products. As functional groups are added to the VOCs, vapor pressures decrease, and the products may either nucleate to form new particles or condense onto pre-existing particles as shown in Figure 1.2. When VOCs are initially oxidized, but the first-generation products are still too volatile to condense, they can be oxidized further to second- and higher-generation products. In the atmosphere, multi-generation products may be very important contributors to SOA formation, based on measured oxygen-to-carbon ratios that are close to 1 (Sun et al., 2009). When a compound condenses onto a particle, it can be absorbed into the particle if the particle is liquid or remain at the surface. Heterogeneous reactions with oxidants may lead to the addition of functional groups or molecular fragmentation; in the latter case, the compound may
Figure 1.2 A schematic diagram of SOA formation.
evaporate from the surface if its vapor pressure becomes sufficiently high. Organic compounds present in particles can also react with each other to form lower volatility oligomers.

A classic example of SOA formation is the photochemical smog found in Los Angeles, where VOCs emitted mainly from vehicles and industrial operations react with NO\textsubscript{x} in the presence of sunlight (Finlayson-Pitts and Pitts, 2000), and some of the VOCs are oxidized and converted to particles by gas-to-particle conversion. For recent measurements, Docherty et al. (2008) reported that SOA fraction in total OA is 70-90% at the peak with the minimum value of ~45% in Riverside, California based on the measurements in a field campaign, Study of Organic Aerosols in Riverside, in 2005. For the northern hemisphere, the fraction of oxygenated OA, which is mainly SOA, in total OA in urban, urban downwind, and rural/remote sites are 64%, 83%, and 95%, respectively (Zhang et al., 2007).

Because of the environmental and health impacts of aerosols, atmospheric aerosol particles are one of the most important components in air quality and climate models. In order to model SOA formation, information on emissions of VOCs, reaction mechanisms, meteorology, and transport are needed. Unfortunately, current models
underestimate atmospheric SOA concentrations by up to an order of magnitude or more (Johnson et al., 2006; Henze et al., 2008; de Gouw et al., 2005; Heald et al., 2006; Volkamer et al., 2006), so more studies are clearly necessary for better predictions. The laboratory studies presented in this thesis provide information about the chemistry of SOA formation from reactions of a major class of organic compounds, the alkenes. The information obtained is valuable for developing detailed models of SOA chemistry, as was done here, and also for providing clues about the relationships between parent hydrocarbon structure and SOA formation mechanisms. Such insight is necessary for condensing detailed laboratory-scale models into simpler versions that are appropriate for broad classes of VOCs, and which can be applied at the local, regional, or global scale.

1.3 Radical-Initiated Reactions of Alkenes

Approximately 90% of global hydrocarbon emissions come from biogenic sources (Guenther et al., 1995). As shown in Figure 1.3, the estimated major contributions are ~44% from isoprene, ~11% from monoterpenes, ~23% from other reactive VOCs such as sesquiterpenes and oxidized VOCs, and the remainder from non-reactive hydrocarbons. The majority of the alkenes, which are dominated in
Figure 1.3 A pie chart of the ratios of anthropogenic and biogenic hydrocarbons in global hydrocarbon emission. The bar graph is showing the ratios of each class of the compounds in the biogenic hydrocarbon emission.
abundance by isoprene and monoterpenes, have multiple C=C double bonds. In the atmosphere, biogenic VOCs react primarily with O₃, OH radicals, and NO₃ radicals. For alkenes, reactions are usually initiated by addition of the oxidant to a C=C double bond, as shown in Figure 1.4, although for OH radicals H-atom abstraction can also be important. A detailed discussion of H-atom abstraction pathways can be found elsewhere (Atkinson and Arey, 2003; Lim and Ziemann, 2009). Addition of an OH or NO₃ radical forms an alkyl radical (more specifically, β-hydroxy and β-nitrooxy alkyl radicals for OH and NO₃ radical reactions, respectively), which in air immediately reacts with O₂ to form a peroxy radical, whereas addition of O₃ forms a primary ozonide. A detailed discussion of O₃ reaction mechanisms can be found elsewhere (Atkinson and Arey, 2003; Docherty et al., 2005), and is omitted here because the studies in this thesis focused on reactions of alkenes with OH and NO₃ radicals. Peroxy radicals react with NO, NO₂, HO₂, or RO₂ depending on the conditions of the reaction. Reaction with NO or RO₂ forms an alkoxy radical, which can decompose or react with O₂ to form carbonyls, or isomerize. The branching ratio for each pathway depends on the structure of the alkoxy radical (Atkinson, 2007). If the alkoxy radicals isomerizes, an alkyl radical is formed. The subsequent reactions are then the same as those described above for alkyl radicals. The alkoxy radical
Figure 1.4 A general mechanism of the OH or NO$_3$ radical-initiated reaction of alkenes.

R$_1$ and R$_2$ can potentially be any functional group.
formed by isomerization has a hydroxy group located 3 carbon atoms away, and this enhances the reverse isomerization rate such that abstraction of an H atom at the α position relative to the hydroxy group dominates (Atkinson, 2007). Reaction with O2 then forms 1,4-hydroxycarbonyls, which can isomerize in the particle phase or on chamber walls to form cyclic hemiacetals. Cyclic hemiacetals dehydrate to form dihydrofurans. This pathway has been observed in previous laboratory studies (Martin et al., 2002; Cavalli et al., 2000). As shown in Figure 1.4, the dihydrofurans formed by dehydration have another C=C double bond to which an oxidant can add on to initiate another reaction. For alkenes that only one double bond, this new double bond is therefore a key to forming more highly oxidized, lower volatility, second-generation products that may form SOA.

1.4 Gas-to-Particle Partitioning

Once a reaction product is formed, as for example by the mechanism described above, it can partition into a particle if its vapor pressure has been sufficiently reduced relative to that of the parent VOC. This is called gas-to-particle partitioning, and is an important process in gas-to-particle conversion and SOA formation. Based on the vapor
pressure of a compound and its environment, equilibrium is established between the compound in the gas and particle phases as

\[ A_g + PM \leftrightarrow A_p \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.1)

where \( A_g \) represents compound A in the gas phase, and \( A_p \) represents compound A in the particle phase. PM represents the particulate matter into which compound A partitions.

Equilibrium gas-particle partitioning of a compound can be calculated by using the theory introduced by Pankow (1994b). As written by Tobias et al. (2000), the equation for the particle / (particle + gas) ratio, G, is

\[
G = \left[ 1 + \frac{A_i}{F_{i,om}} \right]^{-1}
\]

\[
= \left[ 1 + \frac{MW_{om}10^6\zeta_i P^0_{L,i}}{760RT_{om}TSP} \right]^{-1}
\]  \hspace{1cm} (1.2)

where \( A_i \) (ng m\(^{-3}\)) is the concentration of the compound \( i \) in gas phase, \( F_{i,om} \) (ng m\(^{-3}\)) is the concentration of compound \( i \) in the organic material phase associated with suspended particles, \( MW_{om} \) (g mol\(^{-1}\)) is the mean molecular weight of the absorbing organic material, \( \zeta_i \) is the activity coefficient of compound \( i \) in the organic material phase, \( P^0_{L,i} \) (torr) is the (sub-cooled) vapor pressure of pure compound \( i \) as a liquid, \( R \) is the ideal gas constant \((8.206 \times 10^{-5} \, \text{m}^3 \, \text{atm} \, \text{mol}^{-1} \, \text{K}^{-1})\), \( T \) (K) is the temperature, \( f_{om} \) is the mass fraction of TSP that is the absorbing organic material phase, and TSP (\( \mu \text{g} \, \text{m}^{-3} \)) is the concentration of total...
suspended particulate matter. The value of G as a function of log of vapor pressure in torr when TSP = 1000 µg m⁻³, MW_{om} = 300 g mol⁻¹, T = 298 K, ζ_i = 1 (assumed an ideal solution), and f_{om} = 1, is shown in Figure 1.5. Under this condition, compounds with vapor pressure < 10⁻⁶ torr are in the particle phase, compounds with vapor pressure > 10⁻⁶ torr start to partition into the gas phase, and compounds with vapor pressure > 10⁻² torr are > 99 % in the gas phase. As shown in equation 1.2, G will increase or the curve in Figure 1.5 will shift to the right when TSP increases. As Figure 1.5 also shows, G will increase as the vapor pressure becomes smaller. As a general rule, for a homologous series of compounds, vapor pressure decreases as carbon number increases. For an example, 1-octene has a higher vapor pressure than 1-tetradecene. Also, when functional groups are added to a compound the vapor pressure decreases. When using this theory with a chemical reaction mechanism to model experimental SOA data, as was done in the studies presented here, equation 1.2 needs to be solved iteratively because TSP changes over time (Colville and Griffin, 2004).
Figure 1.5 The value of $G$ as a function of log of vapor pressure (torr) when TSP = 1000 µg m$^{-3}$, $MW_{om} = 300$ g mol$^{-1}$, $T = 298$ K, $\zeta_i = 1$ (assumed an ideal solution), and $f_{om} = 1$ in Equation 1.2.
1.5 Objective and Overview of the Dissertation

The objective of my dissertation research was to investigate the products and mechanisms of SOA formation from the OH and NO$_3$ radical-initiated reactions of alkenes. The research included experimental studies of the products of reactions of gas-phase and particle-phase alkenes, analytical method development, chemical mechanism development, and SOA modeling. A summary of each thesis chapter is given below.

In Chapters 2 and 3, studies of the OH radical-initiated reactions of linear alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$ are discussed. Aerosol products were analyzed in real time using the TDPBMS and off-line with the TPTD technique. Particle-phase hydroxynitrates were identified by coupling a TDPBMS to a high-performance liquid chromatograph (HPLC) via a Collison atomizer and quantified from UV absorbance. The structures of hydroxynitrate products were also determined by $^1$H NMR spectroscopy. Gas chromatography with flame ionization detection (GC-FID) was used to quantify the amount of alkene reacted, and combined HPLC analyses of hydroxynitrates and with scanning mobility particle sizer (SMPS) measurements of aerosol mass to calculate hydroxynitrate and SOA yields. Chapter 2 primarily focuses on the yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates and the determination of branching ratios for the
pathways leading to their formation. The effects of the structure of the \( \beta \)-hydroxyperoxy radical, which is the precursor of the \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates, and the presence of water vapor and \( \text{NH}_3 \), on the branching ratios for the formation of \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates are also discussed. Chapter 3 focuses on the identification of SOA products other than hydroxynitrates, in particular cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, and dimers formed from dihydroxycarboxyls, and the development of a model to estimate the composition and yields of gas-phase and SOA products from the reaction. The model is developed based on measured product yields, kinetics data \( (\text{Kwok and Atkinson}, 1995; \text{Aschmann and Atkinson}, 2008; \text{Nishino et al.}, 2009; \text{Atkinson}, 2007) \), and estimated vapor pressures. Since the SOA products formed from dihydroxycarboxyls were not quantifiable with our methods, SOA model simulations were performed assuming two extreme cases: equilibrium gas-particle portioning of dihydroxycarboxyls and non-volatile dihydroxycarboxyls (e.g., through dimer formation). Comparing model results with measured SOA yields provided information on model performance and the extent to which particle-phase reactions might influence SOA model results.

In Chapters 4 and 5, studies of the OH-radical initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of \( \text{NO}_x \) are discussed. The experimental and modeling methods
were similar to those described in Chapters 2 and 3. In these reactions, trihydroxynitrates were observed in addition to $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates, and no dihydroxycarbonyls dimers were observed. Chapter 4 focuses on the determination of branching ratios for the formation of the various hydroxynitrate products and gas-phase ketones. By combining data with those described in Chapter 2 for the reactions of linear alkenes, branching ratios for the formation of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates from primary, secondary, and tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals were calculated. The effect of having water vapor and NH$_3$ in the system was also determined. Chapter 5 focuses on the development of a model to estimate the yields and the composition of the gas-phase and SOA products. The model is more complete than the one developed in Chapter 3 for the OH-radical initiated reactions of linear alkenes, because we were able to quantify most of the SOA products and the absence of particle-phase reactions simplified the chemistry.

In Chapter 6, studies of NO$_3$ radical-initiated reactions of alkenes are discussed. The reactions were carried out in an environmental chamber, and the SOA products were analyzed in real time by using a thermal desorption particle beam mass spectrometer (TDPBMS) (Tobias et al., 2000). The technique called temperature-programmed thermal desorption (TPTD) (Tobias and Ziemann, 1999) was used for off-line qualitative and
quantitative analysis of the SOA products. Briefly, the mass spectra of aerosol compounds that can be separated based on their desorption temperatures are obtained by using TPTD analysis. A mass yield of a product can be calculated by using a thermal desorption profile of total ion signal from TPTD analysis, because total ion signal is proportional to organic mass (Crable and Coggeshall, 1958). Also, a vapor pressure can be estimated from the compound desorption temperature (Chattopadhyay et al., 2001). A mechanism for the reactions was developed based on previous studies of gas-phase NO$_3$ radical-initiated reactions with alkenes (Jay and Stieglitz, 1989; Barnes et al., 1990; Skov et al., 1992; Wängberg, 1993; Kwok et al., 1996; Tuazon et al., 1999) and the products identified in this study. A key part of the proposed mechanism, which is the isomerization of δ-hydroxycarbonyls to form cyclic hemiacetals, which then dehydrate and react further with NO$_3$ radicals, was confirmed by comparing SOA yields from the reactions of 3,5,5-trimethyl-1-hexene and 2-methyl-1-octene. The ratios of the yields of first-generation and second-generation products were also estimated.
1.6 References


Chapter 2

Yields of $\beta$-Hydroxynitrates and Dihydroxynitrates in Aerosol Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of Linear Alkenes in the Presence of NO$_x$

2.1 Abstract

Yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates in aerosol formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of linear C$_8$-C$_{17}$ 1-alkenes and C$_{14}$-C$_{17}$ internal alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$ were measured using a thermal desorption particle beam mass spectrometer coupled to a HPLC with UV-Vis detector for identification and quantification. For 1-alkenes, total yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates normalized for OH radical addition to the C=C double bond increased with carbon number, primarily because of enhanced gas-to-particle partitioning, to a plateau of 0.140 $\pm$ 0.009 in the C$_{14}$-C$_{17}$ range, with 1-hydroxy:2-hydroxy isomer fractions of 0.7:0.3. When combined with yields measured by O’Brien et al. (1998) for reactions of smaller alkenes, the results for both 1-alkenes and internal alkenes indicate that the branching ratios for the formation of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates from the reactions of NO with $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals (averaged over both isomers) increase from 0.009 for C$_2$ up to 0.13-0.15 for C$_{14}$ and larger, and are
approximately half the values determined by Arey et al. (2001) for the corresponding alkyl peroxy radicals. The range of branching ratios may be higher for individual isomers, but this could not be determined. It is estimated that for 1-alkenes, approximately 60-70% of OH radical addition occurred at the terminal carbon atom. Average yields of dihydroxynitrates normalized for OH radical addition were 0.039 ± 0.006 and 0.006 ± 0.002 for 1-alkenes and internal alkenes, with differences reflecting enhanced decomposition of $\beta$-hydroxyalkoxy radicals formed from internal alkenes. The addition of NH$_3$ reduced yields significantly, apparently by altering hydrogen bonding between hydroxy and peroxy groups in hydroxyperoxy radical-NO complexes, whereas adding H$_2$O had no obvious effect.
2.2 Introduction

Alkenes are a major component of the ~1150 Tg of non-methane volatile organic compounds (NMVOCs) emitted annually to the atmosphere (Guenther et al., 1995). Most come from biogenic emissions estimated to be approximately 44% isoprene, 11% monoterpenes, and 1% sesquiterpenes and ~10 times greater than global anthropogenic emissions (Guenther et al., 1995; Griffin et al., 1999). In urban areas, alkenes constitute ~10% of NMVOCs (Calvert et al., 2000). In the atmosphere, alkenes react with OH radicals, NO$_3$ radicals, and O$_3$. The kinetics, products, and mechanisms of these reactions have been studied (Calvert et al., 2000; Atkinson, 1997; Atkinson and Arey, 2003), with results indicating that reactions with OH radicals are the largest atmospheric loss process and lead to the formation of a variety of oxygenated products. Products containing multiple functional groups may condense to form secondary organic aerosol (SOA) and so are of special interest because of the effects of aerosol particles on global climate and human health (Andreae and Crutzen, 1997; Englert, 2004). For example, the formation of SOA from OH radical-initiated reactions of isoprene, monoterpenes, and sesquiterpenes has received considerable attention (Surratt et al., 2006; Lee et al., 2006; Jaoui and
Kamens, 2003a; Jaoui and Kamens, 2003b) because of the large contribution of terpene photooxidation products to global SOA (Griffin et al., 1999).

The products of OH radical-initiated reactions of alkenes depend on the concentration of NO\(_x\), which influences the reactions of organic peroxy radical intermediates. In polluted areas, where NO\(_x\) concentrations are high, they react primarily with NO, leading to the formation of carbonyls, \(\beta\)-hydroxycarbonyls, dihydroxycarbonyls, \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates, and dihydroxynitrates (Calvert et al., 2000; Atkinson, 1997; Atkinson, 2003). Analyses of the latter two products have focused on the gas phase, primarily because of analytical challenges. \(\beta\)-Hydroxynitrates up to C\(_6\) have been measured in the atmosphere (O’Brien et al., 1995; O’Brien et al., 1997; Werner et al., 1999; Fisher et al., 2000) and up to C\(_{10}\) in the laboratory (O’Brien et al., 1998; Tuazon et al., 1998; Chen et al., 1998; Spengnether et al., 2002; Noziére et al., 1999; Aschmann et al., 1998; Aschmann et al., 2002). In the most comprehensive laboratory study to date, O’Brien et al. (1998) measured yields of \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates from reactions of a series of C\(_2\)-C\(_6\) linear alkenes. Yields increased with carbon number from 0.009 to 0.055 and were approximately half those of alkyl nitrates formed from reactions of the corresponding alkanes. Since measurements and modeling indicate that the yields of alkyl nitrates reach
a plateau value of ~0.3 at ~C_{15} (Arey et al., 2001; Zhang et al., 2004), these results suggest that yields of β-hydroxynitrates might be as high as ~0.15 for large alkenes. This would be consistent with the yield of 0.18 measured by Nozière et al. (1999) via FTIR analysis of the total (gas + particle phase) organic nitrate products of the reaction of α-pinene, a C_{10} cyclic alkene. To our knowledge, the only identifications of dihydroxynitrates are those of Aschmann et al. (1998; 2002) for the gas-phase products of the reactions of α-pinene and β-pinene.

Because of the absence of data on the formation of large, low volatility β-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates, which could contribute to atmospheric SOA, we recently measured the yields of these compounds in SOA formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of a series of C_{8}-C_{17} 1-alkenes and C_{14}-C_{17} internal alkenes in the presence of NO_x. Analyses were carried out by coupling a thermal desorption particle beam mass spectrometer to a high-performance liquid chromatograph (HPLC) with UV-Vis detector (Ziemann, 2005), allowing identification and quantification of nitrate-containing products. The results provide new quantitative data as well as insights into the effects of carbon number, the position of the C=C double bond, and also H_2O and NH_3, on the yields of these compounds and the branching ratios of pathways that lead to their
formation. In a study presented elsewhere (Matsunaga et al., 2009), these results were used with data obtained by us and from the literature on other products, and from reaction rate constants calculated using structure-reactivity methods, to develop and evaluate a quantitative chemical mechanism and model of SOA formation from these reactions.

2.3 Experimental Section

**Chemicals.** The following chemicals, with purities (when available) and suppliers, were used: 1-octene (99%), 1-nonene (96%), 1-decene (96%), 1-undecene (97%), 1-dodecene (95%), 1-tridecane (99%), 1-tetradecane (96%), 1-pentadecane (98%), 1-hexadecane (99.8%), 1-heptadecane (>97%), 2-ethylhexyl nitrate (97%), chloroform-d (99.8 atom % D), and dioctyl sebacate (90%) [Sigma-Aldrich], 7-pentadecene (0.25 cis: 0.75 trans) and 8-heptadecene (0.25 cis: 0.75 trans) [ChemSampCo], 7-tetradecene (0.30 cis: 0.70 trans) [TCI], and NO and NH3 [Matheson Gas]. The cis:trans fractions were determined by 1H NMR using a Bruker Avance 600 MHz instrument. Methyl nitrite was synthesized (Taylor et al., 1980) and stored in liquid nitrogen.

**Environmental Chamber Method.** Reactions of C8-C17 1-alkenes, 7-tetradecene, 7-pentadecene, and 8-heptadecene with OH radicals in the presence of NOx...
were performed in a 5900 L PTFE environmental chamber at ~25°C and atmospheric pressure. The chamber was filled with clean, dry air (<5 ppbv hydrocarbons, <1% RH) and has blacklights covering two walls. Dioctyl sebacate (DOS) particles from an evaporation-condensation apparatus were flushed into the chamber to achieve a seed particle concentration of ~200-400 µg m$^{-3}$. An alkene, methyl nitrite, and NO were then added to achieve concentrations of 1 (0.5 and 0.3 for 1-heptadecene and 8-heptadecene), 5, and 5 ppmv. NO suppresses O$_3$ and NO$_3$ radical formation. Reactions were also performed with 1-tetradecene at 50% RH and with 20 ppmv NH$_3$ in dry air.

Reactions were initiated by turning on the blacklights to form OH radicals by methyl nitrite photolysis (Atkinson et al., 1981). After 6 min the blacklights were turned off. Typically, ~40-50% of the alkene reacted, NO decreased by 1-2 ppmv, NO$_x$ stayed approximately constant, and SOA formed within a minute. The average OH radical concentration estimated from the amount of alkene reacted and its OH radical rate constant (Aschmann and Atkinson, 2008) was ~3 x 10$^7$ cm$^{-3}$.

**Particle and Gas Analysis.** A thermal desorption particle beam mass spectrometer (TDPBMS) was used to analyze particle composition in real-time (Tobias et al., 2000) and by temperature-programmed thermal desorption (TPTD) (Tobias and
Ziemann, 1999). Aerosol was sampled into an aerodynamic lens to form a particle beam that impacted on a polymer-coated metal vaporizer rod (Chattopadhyay and Ziemann, 2005). For real-time analysis, the rod was resistively heated to 160°C. Particles vaporized upon impact and the vapor was ionized by 70 eV electrons and analyzed in a quadrupole mass spectrometer. For TPTD analysis, the rod was cooled to -40°C and particles were collected for 30 min. The rod was allowed to warm to -5°C and then heated to 200°C using a 2°C min$^{-1}$ ramp to desorb and separate compounds by volatility prior to mass analysis.

After a reaction, replicate particle samples were collected for 2 h on Millipore filters (1.0 µm pore size, Fluoropore FALP, 47 mm) at flow rates of ~15 L min$^{-1}$. In side-by-side tests these filters performed as well as those with 0.45 µm pore size, but had a smaller pressure drop and so less effect on sample flow rates during collection. Filters were extracted immediately or stored at -20°C. Filters were extracted twice in 4 mL of ethyl acetate at room temperature for >10 min. Extracts were combined, dried with N$_2$, and dissolved in 50 µL of ethyl acetate. Tests using different solvents, sonication, multiple extractions, and filter spiking indicated recovery efficiencies were 90-100%. 

34
Extracts were analyzed using an Agilent 1100 Series HPLC coupled to a UV-Vis diode array detector for quantification and the TDPBMS for identification. A 10 µL sample was separated on a 250 x 4.6 mm Zorbax 5 µm XDB-C18 column at room temperature and a flow rate of 1 mL min⁻¹ using a water/acetonitrile gradient elution method: 50% acetonitrile for 10 min increasing to 100% over 50 min. Absorbance was measured at 210 nm, where the molar absorptivity of alkyl nitrates is \( \geq 20 \) times that of alcohols, ketones, carboxylic acids, or alkenes (Docherty and Ziemann, 2006). The flow then entered a Collison atomizer to form an aerosol, passed through charcoal diffusion dryers to remove solvent vapor, and the dried particles entered the TDPBMS for real-time analysis (Ziemann, 2005). Selected compounds associated with chromatographic peaks were collected, dried, and dissolved in CDCl₃ for \(^1\)H NMR analysis using a Varian Inova 400 MHz instrument.

Standard curves used for quantification were prepared using \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates purified from the SOA extract from the 1-tetradecene reaction. The extract was fractionated using HPLC and mixtures of \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrate isomers and dihydroxynitrate isomers were collected separately after their UV-Vis peaks were detected. Samples were dried under vacuum, weighed in a microbalance, and dissolved in
ethyl acetate to create primary standards. Sample purity was verified by HPLC analysis.

The calibration curve for $\beta$-hydroxynitrates was prepared using the mixture of $\text{C}_{14}\beta$-hydroxynitrate isomers. The calibration curve for dihydroxynitrates was prepared using 2-ethylhexyl nitrate as a secondary standard because the dihydroxynitrate isomer sample was too small to prepare a dilution series. The molar absorptivities of the dihydroxynitrate and $\beta$-hydroxynitrate standards relative to 2-ethylhexyl nitrate were 0.963 and 0.786. The $\beta$-hydroxy group affects nitrate UV absorption whereas more distant groups do not (Shriner et al., 1964). The molar yield of an organic nitrate in particles was calculated as $(\text{moles of compound on filter/sampled air volume})(\text{aerosol mass concentration after reaction/average aerosol mass concentration during sampling})/(\text{moles of alkene reacted per volume of air})$. The second term accounts for wall losses during sampling and was calculated from scanning mobility particle sizer (SMPS) measurements. Yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates measured in replicate experiments were within $\pm 10\%$ of the value.

Aerosol volume concentrations were measured using a SMPS (Wang and Flagan, 1990) comprised of a long differential mobility analyzer, $^{210}\text{Po}$ bipolar charger, TSI Model 310 CPC, and software from the McMurry group at the University of Minnesota.
Number and volume concentrations were within ±10% of those measured with a TSI 3936L72 SMPS system. SOA volume concentrations were calculated from the difference between seed and SOA + seed aerosol volume concentrations, without corrections for chamber wall losses since they were negligible for these 6 min experiments. SOA mass concentrations, $M_{SOA}$, were calculated by multiplying SOA volume concentrations by a particle density of 1.13 g cm$^{-3}$. This value was determined from a dried SOA filter extract from a 1-tetradecene reaction with no seed aerosol: a microliter syringe was weighed, a measured volume of liquid SOA was drawn into the syringe, and then it was re-weighed. Organic aerosol mass concentrations measured with the SMPS were within ±20% of those determined by weighing dried filter extracts.

Alkenes were collected on Tenax TA and analyzed by gas chromatography with flame ionization detector (GC-FID) (Docherty et al., 2005). Concentrations measured for replicate samples taken at 30 min intervals both before and after reaction agreed to within ±5%, so no corrections were made for wall losses.
2.4 Results and Discussion

**Reaction Mechanism.** The mechanism of OH radical-initiated reactions of linear alkenes in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x} (Atkinson and Arey, 2003) is shown in Figure 2.1, where R\textsubscript{1} represents an alkyl group and R\textsubscript{2} represents an H-atom for 1-alkenes and an alkyl group for internal alkenes. Branching ratios are defined as $\alpha_i = r_i/\sum r_i$, where $r_i$ is the rate a species reacts by pathway i and the sum is over all pathways by which the species reacts. The sum of the branching ratios for a species is 1. The branching ratios quantified here are $\alpha_{C=C}$ and $\alpha_1-\alpha_6$. Note that $\alpha_4$ and $\alpha_6$ are associated with the portion of the mechanism labeled “same pathways” in Figure 2.1, and correspond to $\alpha_3$ and $\alpha_5$. The reaction is initiated by addition of an OH radical to the C=C double bond or by H-atom abstraction, with branching ratios $\alpha_{C=C}$ and $1-\alpha_{C=C}$. Products of H-atom abstraction should be similar to those formed from reactions of alkanes (Arey et al., 2001; Atkinson and Arey, 2003; Lim and Ziemann, 2005). We focus here on OH radical addition, which dominates for C\textsubscript{8}-C\textsubscript{17} alkenes, although H-atom abstraction is significant. This pathway forms two isomeric $\beta$-hydroxyalkyl radicals (one for a symmetrical alkene) with branching ratios $\alpha_1$ and $\alpha_2$ ($\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 = \alpha_{C=C}$). The $\beta$-hydroxyalkyl radicals react with O\textsubscript{2} to form $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals that react with NO, forming $\beta$-hydroxynitrates [P1, P2].
Figure 2.1 Mechanism of the OH radical-initiated reaction of linear alkenes in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x}.
with branching ratios $\alpha_3$ and $\alpha_4$ or $\beta$-hydroxyalkoxy radicals with branching ratios $\alpha_5 = 1-\alpha_3$ and $\alpha_6 = 1-\alpha_4$. The $\beta$-hydroxyalkoxy radicals can react with O$_2$, decompose, or isomerize. Reaction with O$_2$ forms $\beta$-hydroxycarbonyls [P3, P4], but is unimportant for C$_n$$>5$ (Atkinson, 2007). Decomposition followed by reaction with O$_2$ creates two aldehydes [P5, P6] (the same for both $\beta$-hydroxyalkoxy isomers) that are too volatile to form SOA. Isomerization through a six-membered ring followed by reaction with O$_2$ forms dihydroxyperoxy radicals that react similarly to $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals. The products are dihydroxynitrates [P7, P8] and dihydroxyalkoxy radicals that isomerize and react with O$_2$ to form dihydroxycarbonyls [P9, P10]. As is shown elsewhere (Matsunaga et al., 2009), dihydroxycarbonyls present in particles can isomerize to cyclic hemiacetals that can dehydrate to dihydrofurans, or they can form dimers.

**SOA Product Identification.** Real-time mass spectra of SOA formed from the reaction of 1-tetradecene are shown in Figure 2.2A. Peaks at $m/z$ 179, 197, and 199 are characteristic of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates, as verified below. Thermal desorption profiles are shown in Figure 2.2B. Total ion (TI) signal is proportional to organic mass (Crable and Coggeshall, 1958) and $m/z$ 46 identifies organic nitrates. The overlap of TI and $m/z$ 46 profiles at low temperature suggests the most volatile products
Figure 2.2 (A) Real-time TDPBMS mass spectra and (B) thermal desorption profiles for SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 1-tetradecene in dry air in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x}. Thermal desorption profiles were smoothed and normalized to peak values.
are organic nitrates, consistent with the expectation that aldehydes are too volatile to form SOA. The most volatile organic nitrates are $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, assigned to the peak at 50°C. Dihydroxynitrates are assigned to the peak at 70°C.

This assignment is consistent with results of HPLC analysis shown in Figures 2.3 and 2.4. Structures of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates are designated using the following notation: (1) hydroxy and nitrooxy groups are designated H and N; (2) the location of a group on the alkyl chain is designated by a number placed before the letter; and (3) the length of the alkyl chain is designated by a number following the letter C. For example, 1,2-dihydroxy-4-nitrooxytetradecane is designated 1,2H4NC$_{14}$.

The predominant fragmentation channel for compounds having adjacent functional groups, as do the $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates, is scission of the C-C bond between the two groups. For 1N2HC$_{14}$, 7H8NC$_{14}$, 7H8NC$_{15}$, 7N8HC$_{15}$, 8H9NC$_{17}$, and 8N9HC$_{17}$, this leads to peaks at $m/z$ 199, 115, 115, 129, 129, 143 from RCHOH$^+$ ions, and neutral aldehyde and NO$_2$ co-products. For small carbon chains, RCHOH$^+$ ions can lose H$_2$O, as occurs for all these ions except $m/z$ 199. For 7H8NC$_{14}$, 7H8NC$_{15}$, 7N8HC$_{15}$, 8H9NC$_{17}$, and 8N9HC$_{17}$ this gives ions at $m/z$ 97, 97, 111, 111, and 125. This is observed in mass spectra of 1,2-dihydroxytetradecane and 7-hydroxytetradecane, which have peaks...
Figure 2.3 (A) HPLC-UV chromatogram and HPLC-TDPBMS mass spectra of (B and C) $\beta$-hydroxynitrate isomers and (D) dihydroxynitrates formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 1-tetradecene in dry air in the presence of NO$_x$. 
Figure 2.4 HPLC-TDPBMS mass spectra of β-hydroxynitrates formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of (A) 7-tetradecene, (B) 7-pentadecene, and (C) 8-heptadecene in dry air in the presence of NOx.
at m/z 199 and m/z 129, 115, 111, and 97, respectively (Gong et al., 2005). For the 1,2H4NC\textsubscript{14} and 1,2H5NC\textsubscript{14} dihydroxynitrates, scission forms an unstable m/z 260 ion that loses HNO\textsubscript{3} or HNO\textsubscript{3} + H\textsubscript{2}O to form m/z 197 and 179 ions. For 1H2NC\textsubscript{14}, scission forms RCO\textsuperscript{+} at m/z 197 and CH\textsubscript{3}OH + NO\textsubscript{2}. These product assignments are consistent with results of \textsuperscript{1}H NMR analyses of β-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates formed from the 1-tetradecene reaction presented in Appendix Table A.2.

**β-Hydroxynitrates Yields.** Measured molar yields (moles of product formed/moles of alkene reacted) of β-hydroxynitrates are presented in Figure 2.5 and Appendix Table A.1. Losses by secondary reactions with OH radicals were estimated at ≤5% using a model that accounted for decreased reactivity in particles and so were neglected. Yields of both β-hydroxynitrates are reported for reactions of 1-alkenes, but total yields are reported for internal alkenes because isomers could not be resolved. Also presented are yields normalized for the fraction of the OH radical reaction that occurred by addition to the C=C double bond, α\textsubscript{C=C} = k\textsubscript{add}/(k\textsubscript{add} + k\textsubscript{abs}), where k\textsubscript{add} and k\textsubscript{abs} are the rate constants for OH radical addition and H-atom abstraction, respectively, with their sum being equal to the total rate constant. Values of α\textsubscript{C=C} were calculated using equations for k\textsubscript{abs} (Kwok and Atkinson, 1995) and k\textsubscript{add} (Nishino et al., 2009) developed.
Figure 2.5 Molar yields of β-hydroxynitrates formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of linear alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO$_x$ (A) without and (B) with normalization for the fraction of the OH radical reaction that occurred by addition to the double bond. In panel A, the dashed curves were drawn to aid the eye. In panel B, the solid line (yield model) is a scaled version of an equation from Arey et al. (2001) for secondary alkyl nitrate yields, the dashed curve through the yields for 1-alkenes (gpp model) is calculated using gas-particle partitioning theory, and the dashed curve through the yields for internal alkenes was drawn to aid the eye.
by Atkinson and co-workers from measured rate constant data. For 1-alkenes, \( k_{\text{abs}} = 2.47 + 1.4 \times (\text{CN}-5) \) and \( k_{\text{add}} = 28 + 9 \times [1-\exp(-0.35 \times (\text{CN}-3))] \), where CN is the carbon number and k values are in units of \( 10^{-12} \text{ cm}^3 \text{ molecule}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1} \). For cis and trans internal alkenes, \( k_{\text{abs}} = 4.93 + 1.4 \times (\text{CN}-8) \), \( k_{\text{add}}(\text{cis}) = 56.4 \), and \( k_{\text{add}}(\text{trans}) = 64 \), and were used with the measured fractions of cis and trans isomers to calculate weighted values of \( \alpha_{\text{C=C}} \).

In general, \( \alpha_{\text{C=C}} \) increases with increased alkyl group substitution at the C=C double bond and decreases with increasing carbon number.

Total \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrate yields measured for reactions of 1-alkenes and internal alkenes without and with normalization for OH addition are shown in Figure 2.5. Normalization reduces scatter caused by differences in the relative reactivity of the C=C double bond. Yields increase with carbon number and for 1-alkenes reach a plateau at \( \text{C}_{14}-\text{C}_{17} \), where the average OH addition-normalized yield is \( 0.133 \pm 0.002 \). Stated uncertainties here and throughout the text are one standard deviation. Yields for internal alkenes may reach a plateau at about \( \text{C}_{17} \), where the OH addition-normalized yield is \( 0.150 \), but this could not be verified because \( \text{C}_{16} \) or \( \text{C}_{18} \) internal alkenes were not available for experiments. Also shown in Figure 2.5 are total yields of \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates formed from reactions of \( \text{C}_2-\text{C}_4 \) and \( \text{C}_6 \) 1-alkenes and cis-2-butene, measured using gas
chromatography (O’Brien et al., 1998). Note that C₂-C₆ β-hydroxynitrates are gas phase products, whereas C₈-C₁₇ β-hydroxynitrates could be in the gas and/or particle phases. Yields reported here are for particulate C₈-C₁₇ β-hydroxynitrates and can be affected by gas-particle partitioning.

The solid curve in Figure 2.5B was calculated using a scaled version of an equation developed by Arey et al. (2001) from measurements of yields of C₂-C₈ secondary alkyl nitrates formed from reactions of n-alkanes with OH radicals in the presence of NOₓ. Results of computational studies (Zhang et al., 2004) are consistent with the form of this equation. They predict alkyl nitrate yields increase with carbon number to a plateau at ~C₁₅ because the internal energy generated by formation of the alkyl peroxy radical-NO intermediate is distributed among more vibrational modes, increasing stability and thereby nitrate formation. The scaling factor used for the curve in Figure 2.5B was 0.455, chosen to reduce the yield calculated for a C₁₅ β-hydroxynitrate from 0.292, the value for a C₁₅ secondary alkyl nitrate, to 0.133, the average total OH addition-normalized β-hydroxynitrate yield at the plateau. Previous studies of C₈ ≤ 8 alkenes noted that β-hydroxynitrate yields are about half those of alkyl nitrates (O’Brien et al., 1998; Atkinson et al., 1995). Quantum chemical calculations indicate yields are
lower for $\beta$-hydroxynitrates because hydrogen bonding between hydroxy and peroxy groups weakens the O-O bond in the $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radical-NO intermediate, enhancing formation of a $\beta$-hydroxyalkoxy radical and NO$_2$ (O’Brien et al., 1998).

Comparison of measured and modeled $\beta$-hydroxynitrates yields (Figure 2.5) indicates the increase in measured yields with increasing carbon number is primarily due to enhanced gas-to-particle partitioning. This conclusion is also consistent with yields that have been corrected for gas-particle partitioning, shown by the dashed curve in Figure 2.5B. Values were calculated by multiplying the plateau value of 0.133 by the fraction of each $\beta$-hydroxynitrates estimated to be in the particle phase using gas-particle partitioning theory (Pankow, 1994) and $\beta$-hydroxynitrates vapor pressures assumed to be the same as those of 1,2-dialkynitrates (Fischer and Ballschmiter, 1998). Yields measured for reactions of internal alkenes are shifted to higher carbon numbers because functional groups located away from the ends of a molecule have less effect on vapor pressure. The shift in the two curves is ~2-3 carbon numbers, which suggests that the yield measured for the C$_{17}$ internal alkene should, like the corresponding C$_{14}$ or C$_{15}$ 1-alkenes, be close to a plateau. The OH addition-normalized yields measured for the $\beta$-hydroxynitrates isomers, 1H2NC$_n$ and 1N2HC$_n$, formed from reactions of 1-alkenes are shown in Figure 2.6 with
Figure 2.6 Molar yields of β-hydroxynitrate isomers formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$, with normalization for the fraction of the OH radical reaction that occurred by addition to the double bond. The solid curves (yield model) are scaled versions of an equation from Arey et al. (2001) for secondary alkyl nitrate yields, and the dashed curves were drawn to aid the eye.
model curves adjusted to match average plateau values at C_{15}. Yields are much larger for 1H2NC_n than 1N2HC_n isomers; a 1H2NC_n isomer was first detected at C_9 and a 1N2HC_n isomer at C_{13}. Yields increase with increasing carbon number reaching plateaus at C_{14} for 1H2NC_n isomers and C_{16} for 1N2HC_n isomers. Average OH addition-normalized yields for 1H2NC_n and 1N2HC_n isomers are 0.098 ± 0.009 and 0.042 ± 0.002 within the C_{14}-C_{17} and C_{16}-C_{17} plateau regions, corresponding to fractions of 0.70 and 0.30 of the total yield of 0.140 ± 0.009. Fractions measured for C_3, C_4, and C_6 1-alkenes were 0.59 and 0.41 (O’Brien et al., 1998). The value of 0.140 does not include yields for the 1N2HC_{14} and 1N2HC_{15} isomers, which are impacted by gas-particle partitioning, and so is more accurate than the value of 0.133 obtained from the total OH addition-normalized yields (Figure 2.5B).

**Branching Ratios.** From Figure 2.1 and the discussion above, it can be seen that the OH addition-normalized yields of the 1H2NC_n [P1] and 1N2HC_n [P2] isomers are equal to $Y_{P1}/\alpha_{C=C} = (\alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C})(\alpha_3)$ and $Y_{P2}/\alpha_{C=C} = (\alpha_2/\alpha_{C=C})(\alpha_4)$, where $Y$ is the measured yield. The fraction of OH radical addition reactions that occur at the first and second carbon atoms, $\alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C}$ and $\alpha_2/\alpha_{C=C}$, can therefore be calculated from our reported OH-normalized yields, if the branching ratios for the formation of these compounds from the
reactions of NO with 1-hydroxy-2-peroxy radicals, $\alpha_3$, and 1-peroxy-2-hydroxy radicals, $\alpha_4$, are known. Here, we estimate these values using two plausible sets of values for $\alpha_3$ and $\alpha_4$ and isomer yield data for $C_n \geq 16$, where gas-particle partitioning is not important.

In the first case, we assume that $\alpha_3 = \alpha_4$. Since $(\alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C}) + (\alpha_2/\alpha_{C=C}) = 1$, then $\alpha_3 = \alpha_4 = 0.14$, the sum of the OH addition-normalized isomer yields, and $(\alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C}) = 0.098/0.14 = 0.70$ and $(\alpha_2/\alpha_{C=C}) = 0.042/0.14 = 0.30$. These values agree well with values of 0.65 and 0.35 measured by Cvetanovic for 1-propene (1976). For the internal alkenes studied here, OH radical addition should not depend on the alkyl groups attached to the double-bonded carbon atoms, so that $(\alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C}) = (\alpha_2/\alpha_{C=C}) = 0.5$ and $\alpha_3 = \alpha_4 = 0.15$, the sum of OH addition-normalized yields measured for the reaction of 8-heptadecene. In this case, then, the branching ratios for the formation of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates from reactions of NO with $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals appear to be similar for 1-alkenes and internal alkenes at their plateaus (assuming for reasons discussed above that the value for 8-heptadecene is close to the plateau) and $\sim 0.13-0.15$.

In the second case, we assume that $\alpha_3/\alpha_4 = 1.5$, the ratio measured recently by Cassanelli et al. (2007) for the formation of alkyl nitrates from reactions of NO with pentyl peroxy radical isomers. These results indicate that the branching ratio for 1-
hydroxy-2-peroxy radicals, $\alpha_3$, could be ~1.5 times the value for 1-peroxy-2-hydroxy radicals, $\alpha_4$, although $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals may not necessarily behave the same as alkyl peroxy radicals, due to the presence of the hydroxy group. Combining the equations

$$\frac{\alpha_3}{\alpha_4} = 1.5, \frac{Y_{P1}}{\alpha_{C=C}} = 0.098 = (\frac{\alpha_3}{\alpha_{C=C}})(\alpha_3), \frac{Y_{P2}}{\alpha_{C=C}} = 0.042 = (\frac{\alpha_2}{\alpha_{C=C}})(\alpha_4),$$

and

$$(\frac{\alpha_1}{\alpha_{C=C}}) + (\frac{\alpha_2}{\alpha_{C=C}}) = 1$$

then gives for reactions of 1-alkenes, $\frac{\alpha_1}{\alpha_{C=C}} = 0.62$, $\frac{\alpha_2}{\alpha_{C=C}} = 0.38$, $\alpha_3 = 0.16$, and $\alpha_4 = 0.11$. The value of $\alpha_3$ for reactions of internal alkenes should therefore be ~0.16 in this case. The agreement between these values and those noted above for 1-propene (Cvetanovic, 1976) and 8-heptadecene is again good, indicating that both sets of branching ratios are consistent with the experimental results and that it is not possible to identify differences in the branching ratios for nitrate formation from reactions of NO with primary and secondary peroxy groups in $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals.

It is worth noting that values of $\frac{\alpha_3}{\alpha_4} \sim 2$ have been suggested (Atkinson et al., 1982), although the measurements were less precise than those of Cassanelli et al. (2007). The resulting branching ratios are, $\frac{\alpha_1}{\alpha_{C=C}} = 0.54$, $\frac{\alpha_2}{\alpha_{C=C}} = 0.46$, $\alpha_3 = 0.18$, and $\alpha_4 = 0.09$, which do not agree as well with the measurements.

**Dihydroxynitrates Yields.** Total yields of dihydroxynitrates in particles are given in Appendix Table A.1; the isomers could not be resolved. Unlike $\beta$-hydroxynitrates yields,
dihydroxynitrate yields are independent of carbon number. This is probably because the additional hydroxy group leads to almost complete gas-to-particle partitioning. Yields without and with normalization for OH addition were 0.029 ± 0.005 and 0.039 ± 0.006 for the C$_{10}$-C$_{17}$ 1-alkenes and 0.005 ± 0.002 and 0.006 ± 0.002 for the internal alkenes. The lower yields for internal alkenes reflect the higher rates of decomposition relative to isomerization for the $\beta$-hydroxyalkoxy radicals (Atkinson, 2007).

**Effects of Humidity and Ammonia on $\beta$-Hydroxynitrate and Dihydroxynitrate Yields.**

As mentioned above, it is thought that the lower branching ratios for nitrate formation from reactions of NO with $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals compared to alkyl peroxy radicals is due to hydrogen bonding between hydroxy and peroxy groups (O’Brien et al., 1998). This effect was further investigated here by comparing yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates formed from reactions of 1-tetradecene in dry air with those formed at 50% RH and in dry air with 20 ppmv of NH$_3$. H$_2$O and NH$_3$ are both capable of hydrogen bonding and so could affect yields.

Results are given in Table 2.1. They show that H$_2$O did not affect the yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, but may have reduced those of dihydroxynitrates (the difference is within uncertainties). The absence of an effect is consistent with results of computations
Table 2.1 Effects of Experimental Conditions on Molar Yields of $\beta$-Hydroxynitrates and Dihydroxynitrates Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 1-Tetradecene in the Presence of NOx.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>condition</th>
<th>$1\text{H}2\text{NC}_{14}$</th>
<th>$1\text{N}2\text{HC}_{14}$</th>
<th>dihydroxynitrates$^b$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Dry</td>
<td>0.078</td>
<td>0.018</td>
<td>0.033</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H$_2$O</td>
<td>0.082</td>
<td>0.018</td>
<td>0.023</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH$_3$</td>
<td>0.018</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.010</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$Dry = <1% RH; H$_2$O = 50% RH; NH$_3$ = 20 ppmv NH$_3$.

$^b$Dihydroxynitrate isomers are 1,2H$_4$NC$_{14}$ and 1,2H$_5$NC$_{14}$. 
that predict that at 300K and 50% RH ~1% of $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals exist as complexes with H$_2$O (Clark et al., 2008). The additional hydroxy group in dihydroxyperoxy radicals might enhance complex formation with H$_2$O sufficiently to reduce the yields. Conversely, NH$_3$ had a large impact on yields, reducing those of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates by ~70-80%. The greater effect of NH$_3$ probably results from stronger hydrogen bonding weakening the O-O bond. According to calculations (Clark et al., 2008), log$K_{eq}$ for forming complexes of H$_2$O with various peroxy radicals at 300K is a linear function of the binding energy of the complex, BE (kcal mol$^{-1}$), with slope ~0.5. If this relationship holds in general, then the fraction of $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals present as complexes, F, with a species C is approximately given by eq. 2.1 with [C] in ppmv.

$$\log F = (0.5 \times BE) + \log [C] - 9.5 \quad (2.1)$$

This equation is used here to estimate the minimum binding energy for a $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radical-NH$_3$ complex. From our results, the minimum value of F at 20 ppmv NH$_3$ is ~0.75 if the branching ratio for $\beta$-hydroxynitrate formation from the reaction of NO with a complex is zero. Otherwise, F and BE are higher. Substituting these values into eq. 2.1 gives BE ~16 kcal mol$^{-1}$, compared to ~6.4 kcal mol$^{-1}$ for the
H₂O complex. In the atmosphere, NH₃ concentrations can range from tens of ppbv in polluted air to tens of pptv in clean air (Finlayson-Pitts and Pitts, 2000). Under these conditions, calculated binding energies of ~22-28 kcal mol⁻¹, which are unlikely, are required to achieve a similar fraction of complexes, suggesting ammonia does not effect these reactions.

2.5 Conclusions

The results presented here represent the first measurements to date of the yields of β-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates in SOA, in this case formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of linear alkenes in the presence of NOₓ. The yields depend on the structure of the parent alkene, which influences a number of important aspects of the reaction mechanism. These include the rates at which OH radicals abstract H atoms and add to the C=C double bond, the C atom to which the OH radical adds, branching ratios for the reactions of organic peroxy radicals with NO, and rates of decomposition and isomerization of alkoxy radicals, as well as gas-particle partitioning of products. The yields can also be impacted by the presence of species such as NH₃, which can form hydrogen bonds with organic peroxy radicals. Reactions were carried out with C₈-C₁₇
alkenes in order to form at least some products that were sufficiently large that gas-to-particle partitioning was essentially complete (and therefore yields measured in aerosol were the same as total yields) and that reaction branching ratios did not depend on carbon number. For 1-alkenes, a plateau was reached at C$_{14}$-C$_{17}$ for the yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates normalized for OH radical addition to the C=C double bond, corresponding to branching ratios for their formation from reactions of NO with $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals (averaged over both isomers) of 0.13-0.15. A similar value was obtained for internal alkenes, but with less data. A simple model developed previously (Arey et al., 2001) to describe the carbon number dependence of this branching ratio for reactions of alkyl peroxy radicals with NO also works well for these reactions after scaling by a factor of 0.455 to match the plateau value. The lower branching ratios for $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals apparently result from hydrogen bonding between the hydroxy and peroxy groups. This branching ratio equation can be used with structure-reactivity calculations (Kwok and Atkinson, 1995; Nishino et al., 2009) of OH radical addition and abstraction to estimate yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates from the reactions of alkenes. For example, for C$_{10}$ monoterpenes and C$_{15}$ sesquiterpenes, major atmospheric alkene emissions whose OH radical reactions are dominated by addition, $\beta$-hydroxynitrato yields
should be close to 0.14, consistent with a total organic nitrate yield of 0.18 measured for the α-pinene reaction (Noziére et al., 1999).

Yields of dihydroxynitrates were highly dependent on the structure of the parent alkene, most likely because of differences in rates of decomposition of β-hydroxyalkoxy radicals, and possibly branching ratios for the reactions of dihydroxyperoxy radicals with NO. Partitioning to the aerosol phase appeared to be complete over the C_{10}-C_{17} carbon number range where analysis was possible, reflecting the lower volatility of these compounds compared to β-hydroxynitrates. As is shown elsewhere (Matsunaga et al., 2009), the dihydroxynitrate yields measured here can be used with the β-hydroxynitrate yields, carbonyl yields from the literature, and structure-reactivity calculations for OH radical reactions and β-hydroxyalkoxy radical isomerization and decomposition to develop a quantitative chemical mechanism and model of SOA formation from these reactions.

It is also worth emphasizing that the yields reported here were measured by coupling a TDPBMS to a HPLC with UV-Vis detector via an atomizer. For these experiments, it was therefore possible to analyze SOA in three different ways with the TDPBMS: in real-time, by temperature-programmed thermal desorption, and following
HPLC separation. Products were therefore separated according to their temporal behavior during formation, volatility, and solvent-column interactions. All of this information can aid in product identification, which is difficult in SOA studies because of the general lack of authentic standards of potential products. Here, authentic standards were synthesized by HPLC purification of SOA samples, followed by $^1$H NMR analysis to verify their identity. The use of the same particle mass spectrometer for all analyses also has the advantage that it is easier to identify possible artifacts that can occur during off-line analysis, since the mass spectra can be directly compared. We have recently used this approach with a high-resolution time-of-flight Aerodyne aerosol mass spectrometer (AMS), which further enhances analytical capabilities by providing elemental analysis, to aid in the creation of a database of multifunctional organic nitrate mass spectra. Given the variety of particle mass spectrometers currently in use, this may be an approach for others to consider.
2.6 References


Surratt, J.D., Murphy, S.M., Kroll, J.H., Ng, N.L., Hildebrandt, L., Sorooshian, A., Szmigielski, R., Vermeylen, R., Maenhaut, W.,Claeys, M., Flagan, R.C., Seinfeld, J.H.,

65
2006. Chemical Composition of Secondary Organic Aerosol Formed from the

1980. Atmospheric Photodissociation Lifetimes for Nitromethane, Methyl Nitrite, and

Using Temperature-Programmed Thermal Desorption Particle Beam Mass Spectrometry.

Analysis of Organic Aerosols Using a Thermal Desorption Particle Beam Mass

Technol.*, 32, 2106-2112.


Werner, G., Kastler, J., Looser, R., Ballschmiter, K., 1999. Organic Nitrates of Isoprene as


Reactions of Ozone with Oleic Acid in Pure and Mixed Particles. *Faraday Discuss.*, 130,
469-490.
Chapter 3

Composition and Yields of Secondary Organic Aerosol Formed from Radical-Initiated Reactions of Linear Alkenes in the Presence of NO$_x$:

Modeling and Measurements

3.1 Abstract

The products and mechanism of secondary organic aerosol (SOA) formation from the OH radical-initiated reactions of linear alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$ were investigated in an environmental chamber. The SOA consisted primarily of products formed through reactions initiated by OH radical addition to the C=C double bond, including $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates, as well as cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, and dimers formed from particle-phase reactions of dihydroxycarbonyls. 1,4-Hydroxynitrates formed through reactions initiated by H-atom abstraction also appeared to contribute. Product yields and OH radical and alkoxy radical rate constants taken from the literature or calculated using structure-reactivity methods were used to develop a quantitative chemical mechanism for these reactions. SOA yields were then calculated using this mechanism with gas-particle partitioning theory and estimated
product vapor pressures for comparison with measured values. Calculated and measured SOA yields agreed very well at high carbon numbers when semi-volatile products were primarily in the particle phase, but diverged with decreasing carbon number to a degree that depended on the model treatment of dihydroxycarbonyls, which appeared to undergo reversible reactions in the particle phase. The results indicate that the chemical mechanism developed here provides an accurate representation of the gas-phase chemistry, but the utility of the SOA model depends on the partitioning regime. The results also demonstrate some of the advantages of studying simple aerosol-forming reactions in which the majority of products can be identified and quantified, in this case leading to insights into both gas- and particle-phase chemistry.
3.2. Introduction

One purpose of experimental studies of aerosols is to provide data for developing detailed models of the physical and chemical processes controlling atmospheric aerosol properties such as chemical composition, size distribution, light scattering and absorption, hygroscopicity, and cloud condensation nucleating activity. These models in turn are incorporated in simplified form into local, regional, and global scale models, which can be used to understand collective effects and to develop strategies for minimizing the impacts of human activities on air quality, visibility, climate, and human and ecosystem health (Seinfeld and Pandis, 1998). A major challenge is the development of models of secondary organic aerosol (SOA) formation, a complex process in which gas- and particle-phase reactions involving organic compounds and oxidants lead to an array of products that can partition to particles (Kroll and Seinfeld, 2008). In most models, these processes are treated using simple empirical parameterizations (Kanakidou et al., 2005). In a few cases, however, detailed mechanisms of gas-phase chemical reactions have been combined with gas-particle partitioning, emissions, and meteorology to predict the chemical composition and mass of atmospheric SOA (Johnson et al., 2006). Unfortunately, current models tend to under-predict
atmospheric SOA mass concentrations (deGouw et al., 2005; Heald et al., 2005; Johnson et al., 2006; Volkamer et al., 2006) probably for a variety of reasons. For example, discrepancies have been attributed to problems with laboratory SOA yield measurements (Presto and Donahue, 2006; Kroll et al., 2007), and to an absence in models of possible sources of SOA such as heterogeneous chemistry (Johnson et al., 2006), first-generation products of anthropogenic VOC oxidation (Volkamer et al., 2006), semi-volatile emissions (Robinson et al., 2007), higher-generation reaction products (Donahue et al., 2006), and cloud processing (Altieri et al., 2006).

In general, models predict that global SOA is derived primarily from the oxidation of biogenic alkenes, in particular linear, branched, and cyclic terpenes consisting of isoprene (C_{5}H_{8}), monoterpenes (C_{10}H_{16}), and sesquiterpenes (C_{15}H_{24}) (Kanakidou et al., 2005). Recent field studies (Weber et al., 2007) also indicate terpene oxidation is responsible for a large fraction of SOA in urban areas. In spite of the importance of these reactions and the considerable effort expended investigating gas- and particle-phase products, the chemical mechanisms are poorly understood (Atkinson and Arey, 2003; Kroll and Seinfeld, 2008). Recently, we investigated SOA products formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of simple linear alkenes in the presence of NO_{x},
conditions representative of a polluted atmosphere. Such studies provide insights into products and mechanisms of more complex alkene reactions. Major $\beta$-hydroxynitrate and dihydroxynitrate SOA products were identified and quantified and used to determine some of the branching ratios for reaction pathways leading to their formation (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2008). Here, those results were used with additional SOA composition information obtained in that study but not previously reported, along with product data from the literature and structure-reactivity calculations of rate constants to develop a quantitative chemical mechanism for reactions of linear 1-alkenes and internal alkenes. This mechanism was then used to model the formation of SOA and the results were compared with measured SOA yields.

3.3. Experimental

Chemicals. The C$_8$-C$_{17}$ linear 1-alkenes, 7-tetradecene, 7-pentadecene, 8-heptadecene, dioctyl sebacate, and NO were obtained from commercial suppliers (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2008). Methyl nitrite was synthesized (Taylor et al., 1980) and stored in liquid nitrogen until used, and O$_3$ was generated using a Welsbach T-408 O$_3$ generator.
Environmental Chamber Method. Alkenes were reacted with OH radicals in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x} in a 5900 L PTFE environmental chamber filled with clean, dry air (<5 ppbv hydrocarbons, <1% RH) at \textasciitilde25\textdegree C and atmospheric pressure. The reaction mixture was \textasciitilde200-400 µg m\textsuperscript{-3} of dioctyl sebacate (DOS) seed particles added from an evaporation-condensation source and 1 (0.5 and 0.3 for 1- and 8-heptadecene), 5, and 5 ppmv of alkene, methyl nitrite, and NO. Reactions were initiated by turning on blacklights to form OH radicals by methyl nitrite photolysis (Atkinson et al., 1981). The average OH radical concentration for 6 min of reaction was \textasciitilde3 \times 10\textsuperscript{7} cm\textsuperscript{-3}, determined from the 40-50\% of alkene that reacted and reaction rate constants (Aschmann and Atkinson, 2008a).

Particle and Gas Analysis. A thermal desorption particle beam mass spectrometer (TDPBMS) was used to analyze particle composition in real-time (Tobias et al., 2000) and by temperature-programmed thermal desorption (TPTD) (Tobias and Ziemann, 1999). Air was sampled into the TDPBMS and particles were formed into a beam and impacted on a polymer-coated metal vaporizer (Chattopadhyay and Ziemann, 2005). For real-time analysis, the vaporizer was resistively heated to 160\textdegree C and particles evaporated on impact. Vapor was ionized by 70 eV electrons and analyzed in a
quadrupole mass spectrometer. For TPTD analysis, the vaporizer was cooled to -40°C, particles were collected for 30 min, and the vaporizer was allowed to warm to -5°C and was then heated to 200°C using a 2°C min⁻¹ ramp to desorb and separate compounds by volatility prior to mass analysis.

SOA mass concentration, $M_{SOA}$, was calculated as the difference in aerosol volume concentrations of seed and SOA + seed measured using a scanning mobility particle sizer (SMPS) (Wang and Flagan, 1990), multiplied by a SOA density of 1.13 g cm⁻³ measured using a microliter syringe, a microbalance, and a dried filter extract of liquid SOA formed in the reaction of 1-tetradecene. Alkenes were collected on Tenax TA solid adsorbent before and after reaction and analyzed by GC-FID (Docherty et al., 2005) to determine the mass of alkene reacted, $\Delta M_{alkene}$. SOA yields were calculated as $Y_{SOA} = M_{SOA}/\Delta M_{alkene}$ (Odum et al., 1996).

3.4. Development of a chemical mechanism and model of SOA formation

**Reaction Mechanism.** The mechanism of OH radical-initiated reactions of linear alkenes in the presence of NOₓ is shown in Figure 3.1., where $R_1$ represents an alkyl group and $R_2$ represents an H-atom in 1-alkenes and an alkyl group in internal
Figure 3.1 Mechanism of the OH radical-initiated reaction of linear alkenes in the presence of NO\(_x\). \(R_1\) represents an alkyl group and \(R_2\) represents an H-atom in 1-alkenes and an alkyl group in internal alkenes.
alkenes. Detailed discussions of the pathways leading to products P1-P10 can be found in Atkinson and Arey (2003). The reaction is initiated primarily by addition of an OH radical to the C=C double bond, although H-atom abstraction is significant. Addition forms two \( \beta \)-hydroxyalkyl radical isomers, which react with \( O_2 \) to form \( \beta \)-hydroxyperoxy radicals that react with NO, forming \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates [P1, P2] or \( \beta \)-hydroxyalkoxy radicals. The \( \beta \)-hydroxyalkoxy radicals can react with \( O_2 \), decompose, or isomerize. Reaction with \( O_2 \) forms \( \beta \)-hydroxycarbonyls [P3, P4], but is not important for the large alkenes of interest here (Atkinson, 2007). Decomposition followed by reaction with \( O_2 \) forms two aldehydes [P5, P6] (and a small fraction of other products that are not shown, such as 1,4-hydroxycarbonyls and 1,4-hydroxynitrates; Aschmann and Atkinson, in preparation), and isomerization followed by reaction with \( O_2 \) forms dihydroxyperoxy radicals that react similarly to \( \beta \)-hydroxyperoxy radicals. The products are dihydroxynitrates [P7, P8] and dihydroxyalkoxy radicals that isomerize and react with \( O_2 \) to form dihydroxycarbonyls [P9, P10]. Dihydroxycarbonyls [P9, P10] can isomerize to cyclic hemiacetals [P11] that can dehydrate to dihydrofurans [P12], or they can form dimers [P13-P15]. On the basis of other studies (Holt et al., 2005; Gong et al., 2005; Lim and Ziemann, 2005; Kern and Spiteller, 1996) and results presented below,
dihydroxyketones \([\text{P9}]\) probably form mostly cyclic hemiacetals \([\text{P11}]\) and dihydrofurans \([\text{P12}]\) and dihydroxyaldehydes \([\text{P10}]\) form mostly dimers \([\text{P13-P15}]\).

**Branching Ratios and Product Yields.** The branching ratios shown in Figure 3.1 are defined as:

\[ \alpha_i = \frac{r_i}{\sum r_i} \]

where \(r_i\) is the rate a species reacts by pathway \(i\) and the sum is over all pathways by which the species reacts. The sum of branching ratios for a species is 1. Note that \(\alpha_4, \alpha_6, \alpha_8, \alpha_{10}, \alpha_{12}, \alpha_{14},\) and \(\alpha_{16}\) are associated with the portion of the mechanism labeled “same pathways” and correspond to \(\alpha_3, \alpha_5, \alpha_7, \alpha_9, \alpha_{11}, \alpha_{13},\) and \(\alpha_{15}\), respectively. Values used in the model are given in Table 3.1, and the methods by which they were calculated described in Appendix B. The values are consistent with experimental data (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2008; Aschmann and Atkinson, in preparation) and with rate constants for OH radical (Kwok and Atkinson, 1995; Ashmann and Atkinson, 2008; Nishino et al., 2009) and alkoxy radical reactions (Atkinson, 2007). Molar yields normalized for OH radical addition [(moles of product/moles of alkene reacted)/\(\alpha_{C=C}\)], which are equal to the product of the branching ratios along the pathway leading to the reaction product divided by \(\alpha_{C=C}\), were calculated using branching ratios in Table 3.1 and are given in Table 3.2 along with molar yields of 1,4-hydroxynitrates.
Table 3.1 Branching ratios used for modeling SOA formation from OH radical-initiated reactions of linear alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x}.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>branching ratio</th>
<th>1-alkenes</th>
<th>internal alkenes</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( a_{C=C} )</td>
<td>( 0.70 \times a_{C=C} )</td>
<td>( 0.50 \times a_{C=C} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( a_1 )</td>
<td>( 0.30 \times a_{C=C} )</td>
<td>( 0.50 \times a_{C=C} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( a_2 )</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td>0.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( a_3, a_4 )</td>
<td>0.86</td>
<td>0.85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( a_5, a_6 )</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( a_7, a_8 )</td>
<td>0.51</td>
<td>0.67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( a_9 )</td>
<td>0.34</td>
<td>0.67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( a_{10} )</td>
<td>0.49</td>
<td>0.33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( a_{11} )</td>
<td>0.66</td>
<td>0.33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( a_{12} )</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td>0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( a_{13}, a_{14} )</td>
<td>0.92</td>
<td>0.98</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\( a_{C=C} = k_{\text{add}}/(k_{\text{add}} + k_{\text{abs}}) \). For 1-alkenes, \( k_{\text{abs}} = 2.47 + 1.4 \times (\text{CN-5}) \) and \( k_{\text{add}} = 28 + 9 \times [1-\exp(-0.35 \times (\text{CN-3}))] \). For \textit{cis} and \textit{trans} internal alkenes, \( k_{\text{abs}} = 4.93 + 1.4 \times (\text{CN-8}) \), \( k_{\text{add}}(\text{cis}) = 56.4 \), and \( k_{\text{add}}(\text{trans}) = 64 \). CN is the alkene carbon number. See Appendix B for additional details.
Table 3.2 Normalized molar yields of products used to model SOA formation from OH radical addition and H-atom abstraction reactions of linear alkenes in dry air in the presence of NOx.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>product</th>
<th>normalized molar yield&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt;</th>
<th>1-alkenes</th>
<th>internal alkenes</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>OH radical addition</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>β-hydroxynitrates</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P1</td>
<td>0.098</td>
<td>0.075</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P2</td>
<td>0.042</td>
<td>0.075</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P1 + P2</td>
<td>0.140</td>
<td>0.150</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>β-hydroxycarbonyls</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P3</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P4</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>carbonyls</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P5</td>
<td>0.395</td>
<td>0.570</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P6</td>
<td>0.395</td>
<td>0.570</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P5 + P6</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.140</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dihydroxynitrates</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P7</td>
<td>0.024</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P8</td>
<td>0.014</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P7 + P8</td>
<td>0.038</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dihydroxycarbonyls</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P9</td>
<td>0.271</td>
<td>0.137</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P10</td>
<td>0.157</td>
<td>0.137</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P9 + P10</td>
<td>0.428</td>
<td>0.274</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>H-atom abstraction</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,4-hydroxynitrates</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<sup>a</sup>Normalized molar yields (OH radical addition) = (moles of product/moles of alkene reacted)/α<sub>C=C</sub>. Normalized molar yield (H-atom abstraction) = (moles of product/moles of alkene reacted)/(1 - α<sub>C=C</sub>). Values of α<sub>C=C</sub> calculated using equations in Table 3.1.
normalized for H-atom abstraction [(moles of product/moles of alkene reacted)/(1 - \(\alpha_{C=C}\))].

**H-atom Abstraction and Secondary Reactions.** First-generation products formed through H-atom abstraction pathways and second-generation products formed through reactions of first-generation products with OH radicals have the potential to form SOA, but the reaction mechanisms are complex and the product contributions difficult to quantify (Lim and Ziemann, 2005). For simplicity, in a first set of calculations it was assumed that the only contribution of H-atom abstraction pathways to SOA formation was from 1,4-hydroxynitrates, and that the formation of SOA products from secondary reactions with OH radicals was negligible. The 1,4-hydroxynitrates were assumed to be formed with an H-atom abstraction-normalized molar yield of 0.1 estimated from measured yields (Lim and Ziemann, 2005; Reisen et al., 2005) and consistent with values recently determined by us for C\(_{13}\)-C\(_{17}\) \(n\)-alkanes. The major first generation products of H-atom abstraction should be alkyl nitrates, 1,4-hydroxycarbonyls, and 1,4-hydroxynitrates, as observed in similar reactions of \(n\)-alkanes (Lim and Ziemann, 2005; Reisen et al., 2005). As shown below, thermal desorption profiles showed no alkyl nitrates or 1,4-hydroxycarbonyls, which would be easily detected since they would
desorb before $\beta$-hydroxynitrates. Most likely, alkyl nitrates were too volatile to form SOA, and 1,4-hydroxycarbonyls were absent because they isomerized to cyclic hemiacetals that dehydrated to volatile dihydrofurans (they are more volatile than $P12$ in Figure 3.1 because they do not have the hydroxy group) (Holt et al., 2005; Lim and Ziemann, 2005). The dihydrofurans may have then reacted with OH radicals, but would mostly form volatile carbonyl esters (Martin et al., 2002).

In a second set of calculations, upper limits to the possible contributions of secondary reaction products to SOA yields were estimated using a kinetic model written in FACSIMILE that included gas-phase reactions of alkenes and first-generation products with OH radicals, and gas-particle partitioning. The rate constants for H-atom abstraction and OH radical addition reactions for alkenes were calculated using the equations of Nishino et al. (2009) given in Supporting Information, and rate constants for H-atom abstraction from saturated products were calculated using the structure-reactivity method of Kwok and Atkinson (1995). An equation for the time-dependent OH radical concentration was obtained from multiple measurements of alkene concentrations made during an experiment with 1-tetradecene. Gas-particle partitioning was calculated as described below using measured aerosol mass concentrations. Yields of products formed
by H-atom abstraction followed by OH radical addition were calculated by assuming all
H-atom abstraction products (alkyl nitrates, 1,4-hydroxycarbonyls, and 1,4-
hydroxynitrates) stayed in the gas phase during the entire reaction, thereby
overestimating to some extent the formation of secondary reaction products. Yields of
products formed by OH radical addition followed by H-atom abstraction were calculated
by assuming that during the reaction all OH-addition products (β-hydroxynitrates,
dihydroxynitrates, and dihydroxycarbonyls) other than carbonyls underwent gas-particle
partitioning to the same extent as β-hydroxynitrates, and that in the particle phase they
did not react with OH radicals. Since the actual vapor pressures of these compounds are
the same or less than β-hydroxynitrates, these calculations also overestimate the
formation of secondary reaction products. Because carbonyls are volatile fragmentation
products and generally react with OH radicals to form even smaller carbonyls (Atkinson
and Arey, 2003), it was assumed that their reactions did not contribute to SOA
formation. Calculated molar yields of products were converted to mass yields using ratios
of the molecular weights of product and alkene, and these mass yields were then used as
a upper limit estimate of the contribution of these reactions to the SOA yields.
**Gas-Particle Partitioning.** The equilibrium gas-particle partitioning of products was calculated using the theory of Pankow (1994), which assumes that particulate organic matter (POM) is a single, liquid organic phase. This assumption seems valid since dried filter extracts were clear liquids and when seed particle concentrations were increased from ~200 to ~1000 µg m$^{-3}$ in 7-tetradecene experiments the SOA yield of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates was ~4 times larger, indicating enhanced gas-to-particle partitioning. Partitioning coefficients were calculated from compound vapor pressures, activity coefficients, and mean molecular weights of POM and used with organic aerosol mass concentration, $M_O (M_{SOA} + M_{seed})$, to calculate the fraction of each compound in the particle phase. Activity coefficients were assumed to be unity (Seinfeld et al., 2001) and the mean molecular weight of POM was assumed to be that of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates. Product vapor pressures were estimated from measured partitioning of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and group contribution calculations described in Appendix Figure B.1 and Table B.1.

**SOA Yield Calculations.** For each alkene, the total (gas + particle) mass concentration of each product was calculated by multiplying the molar yield in Table 2 by $\alpha_{C=C}$ for OH radical addition and $1-\alpha_{C=C}$ for H-atom abstraction, the ratio of the molecular weights of product and alkene, and $\Delta M_{alkene}$. Product mass concentrations,
partitioning coefficients, and seed particle mass concentration were then used to calculate SOA yield (Colville and Griffin, 2004). In one case, it was assumed that dihydroxycarbonyls [P9, P10] existed entirely in the particle phase as non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals [P11], dihydrofurans [P12], and dimers [P13-P15] rather than in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium.

3.5 Results and discussion

**Measured SOA Products.** Thermal desorption profiles and real-time mass spectra of SOA formed from reactions of 1-tetradecene and 7-tetradecene are shown in Figure 3.2. In Figure 3.2A, total ion (TI) signal is proportional to organic mass (Crable and Coggeshall, 1958), so profiles represent distributions of SOA mass with respect to volatility. For both reactions, there are peaks at 40-50°C and 70-80°C. For 1-tetradecene, a large peak is also observed at 90-100°C, whereas for 7-tetradecene only a tail appears in this temperature range. The first two peaks are from β-hydroxynitrates [P1, P2] and dihydroxynitrates [P7, P8]; their mass spectra after HPLC separation, desorption profiles of characteristic ions, fragmentation pathways, and yields are discussed elsewhere (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2008). Those formed from reactions of 1-tetradecene and 7-
**Figure 3.2** (A) Total ion ($m/z$ 50-500) thermal desorption profiles and (B,C) real-time mass spectra of SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-tetradecene and 7-tetradecene in dry air in the presence of NO$_x$. In Figure 3.2A, signals from DOS seed particles were removed by multiplying the $m/z$ 185 profiles (due to overwhelmingly to DOS) by the ratio of (total ion)/($m/z$ 185) signals measured for DOS seed particles in real-time, and then subtracting. Thermal desorption profiles were smoothed and normalized to peak values.
tetradecene have characteristic peaks at $m/z$ 179, 197, and 199, and at $m/z$ 97 and 115, respectively.

Peaks at $m/z$ 227 and 209 in Figures 3.2B, 3.2C are characteristic of cyclic hemiacetals [P11] and dihydrofurans [P12], the ions being formed by loss of OH from the molecular ion (Gong et al., 2005; Lim and Ziemann, 2005). These compounds have low vapor pressures, as indicated by thermal desorption profiles shown in Figure 3.3A. The cyclic hemiacetal desorbed after the dihydrofuran because the extra hydroxy group lowers its vapor pressure. These profiles overlap with a large peak at 90-100°C in the TI profile in Figure 3.2A, indicating the compounds may contribute significant SOA mass. This product assignment is supported by results shown in Figure 3.3B. In this experiment, 20 ppmv of O$_3$ was added to the chamber 4 hr after the lights were turned off. SOA $m/z$ 209 signal disappeared immediately due to reaction of the dihydrofuran double bond with O$_3$. The $m/z$ 227 signal decayed with a lifetime of ~5-10 min, consistent with measured rates of dehydration of cyclic hemiacetals (Holt et al., 2005). The slower decay of $m/z$ 185 signal, mostly from DOS seed particles, is consistent with H-atom abstraction by NO$_3$ radicals (Docherty and Ziemann, 2006) formed from reaction of O$_3$ with NO$_2$. 
Figure 3.3 Mass spectral analyses of SOA formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-tetradecene in dry air in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x}. (A) Thermal desorption profiles of ions characteristic of cyclic hemiacetals ($m/z$ 227) and dihydrofurans ($m/z$ 209), (B) real-time signals of these ions after adding O\textsubscript{3} to the chamber containing SOA, (C) real-time mass spectra for $m/z$ 300-500, and (D) thermal desorption profiles of ions characteristic of dimers. A, C, and D were obtained without added O\textsubscript{3}. Thermal desorption profiles were smoothed and normalized to peak values, and signals in B were normalized to values and 0 min.
The \( m/z \) 300-500 region of the real-time mass spectrum from the reaction of 1-tetradecene is shown in Figure 3.3C. These peaks extend beyond masses of potential products of secondary reactions with OH radicals. For example, addition of three hydroxy groups and two nitrooxy groups gives a product with molecular weight 368. Instead, these peaks are probably associated with oligomeric species formed by particle-phase reactions. Trends observed in mass spectra for reactions of 1-undecene, 1-dodecene, and 1-tridecene (Figure 3.4), and 1-tetradecene (Figure 3.3C) support this idea. The mass spectra exhibit two patterns. Peaks at \( m/z \) 316, 330, 344, and 358 for the reaction of 1-undecene are shifted by \( m/z \) 14, 28, and 42 in mass spectra from reactions of 1-dodecene, 1-tridecene, and 1-tetradecene. This is expected for products of reactions of a homologous series of compounds with successive molecular weights increasing by 14 units. A different pattern is observed at higher masses, however. Peaks at \( m/z \) 370, 386, and 402 for the reaction of 1-undecene are shifted by \( m/z \) 28, 56, and 84 in mass spectra from reactions of 1-dodecene, 1-tridecene, and 1-tetradecene. This pattern is consistent with the formation of dimers \([P13-P15]\), where an increase of 14 units in monomer mass increases dimer mass by 28 units.
Figure 3.4 Real-time mass spectra characteristic of dimers in SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of (A) 1-undecene, (B) 1-dodecene, and (C) 1-tridecene in dry air in the presence of NO$_x$. 
For these reactions, the most likely monomers are dihydroxyaldehydes [P10].

These compounds are major gas-phase products from reactions of C₄-C₈ 1-alkenes (Kwok et al., 1996), and synthetic organic chemistry studies showed α-hydroxyaldehydes such as these are unstable and rapidly form dimers (Kern and Spiteller, 1996). Dimers formed from products of the reaction of 1-tetradecene would have molecular weight 488. Peaks at m/z 454, 470, and 486 would correspond to (M-34)⁺, (M-18)⁺, and (M-2)⁺ ions formed by loss of H₂O₂, H₂O, and H₂ from a dimer (or dimer isomers) of mass M, which is reasonable. Desorption profiles of these ions have peaks at 92, 102, and 112°C, as shown in Figure 3.3D, indicating three dimers with different volatilities. If all are dihydroxyaldehyde dimers, then three possible isomer structures are shown in Figure 3.1. Product P13 is a linear hemiacetal and products P14 and P15 are cyclic hemiacetals. The latter two structures were proposed for dimers formed from synthesized α-hydroxyaldehydes (Kern and Spiteller, 1996). In the experiment described above in which O₃ was added to the chamber 4 hr after the lights were off, m/z 470 and 486 signals decayed in a few minutes (the m/z 454 initial signal was too small to monitor). This indicated the compounds are saturated but can dehydrate to dihydrofurans, as expected for products P14 and P15. Because desorption profiles of dimer ions overlap with the
Figure 3.5 Calculated yields of SOA products formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-alkenes and internal alkenes in dry air in the presence of NOx. Figures show results for dihydroxycarbonyls (DHC), β-hydroxynitrates (HN), and dihydroxynitrates (DHN) formed by OH radical addition pathways, and 1,4-hydroxynitrates formed by the H-atom abstraction (HAA) pathway. The models assumed that secondary reaction products did not contribute to SOA mass and that dihydroxycarbonyls were either (gpp) in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium or (nv) entirely in the particle phase as non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, or dimers.
large peak at 90-100°C in the TI profile in Figure 3.2A, these compounds may contribute significant SOA mass. Mass spectra showed no evidence for dimer formation from reactions of internal alkenes, probably because the dihydroxycarbonyl products are dihydroxyketones, which have less of a tendency than dihydroxyaldehydes to form hemiacetals and cyclic dimers.

SOA Composition and Yields: Model Results and Measurements. Yields of SOA products calculated using the model described above, without estimates for contributions from secondary reaction products, are shown in Figure 3.5 and Appendix Tables B.3 and B.4. The difference between Figures 3.5A and 3.5B and the two halves of Figure 3.5C is the model treatment of dihydroxycarbonyls. For results labeled DHC-gpp it was assumed that dihydroxycarbonyls are in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium, whereas for results labeled DHC-nv it was assumed they form non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, and dimers that are entirely in the particle phase. For 1-alkenes $\geq C_{15}$, differences in composition calculated with the two models are small because in both cases dihydroxycarbonyls are almost entirely in the particle phase. Calculated yields of individual products in SOA averaged over this carbon number range were 0.337 (DHC-gpp) and 0.350 (DHC-nv) for dihydroxycarbonyls, 0.121 for $\beta$-
hydroxynitrates, 0.036 for dihydroxynitrates, and 0.037 for 1,4-hydroxynitrates. The average total yields for SOA products of 0.530 (DHC-gpp) and 0.544 (DHC-nv) agree very well with the average measured SOA yield of 0.518. Note that the measured SOA yields were not used in the development of the model, so this is a comparison of the model output with independent measurements. Dihydroxycarbonyls were calculated to contribute ~65% of SOA mass, consistent with the total ion profile shown in Fig. 2A for the 1-tetradecene reaction where roughly half of the area is contributed by the peak at 94°C. As the carbon number decreased from C_{15} to C_{8}, SOA composition changed due to gas-particle partitioning, with compounds being preferentially lost to the gas phase in the order of vapor pressures: 1,4-hydroxynitrates > β-hydroxynitrates ~ dihydroxycarbonyls (DHC-gpp) > dihydroxynitrates > dihydroxycarbonyls (DHC-nv). The differences in composition predicted by the two models also increased dramatically because dihydroxycarbonyls had the largest total (gas + particle) yields of all potential SOA-forming products and, depending on the model, could be predominantly in either the gas or particle phases. For the C_{15} and C_{17} internal alkenes, differences in calculated composition due to the treatment of dihydroxycarbonyls were small. Calculated average yields of individual products in SOA were 0.240 (DHC-gpp) and 0.265 (DHC-nv) for
dihydroxycarbonyls, 0.124 for $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, 0.006 for dihydroxynitrates, and 0.021 for 1,4-hydroxynitrates. The average total SOA yields of 0.390 (DHC-gpp) and 0.418 (DHC-nv) agree very well with the measured value of 0.405 for $\text{C}_{17}$. As the carbon number decreased from $\text{C}_{15}$ to $\text{C}_{14}$, SOA composition changed as it did for reactions of 1-alkenes, but with greater loss of compounds to the gas phase because of their higher vapor pressures.

SOA yields calculated without and with upper limit estimates for the contributions from secondary reaction products are compared with measured values over the entire carbon number range in Figures 3.6A and 3.6B, respectively, and are also given in Appendix Tables B.2-B.4. Results shown in Figure 3.6A indicate that for 1-alkenes the DHC-nv and DHC-gpp models work very well down to about $\text{C}_{12}$ and $\text{C}_{13}$, respectively. Below these carbon numbers, the DHC-nv model over-predicts SOA yields by an amount that increases with decreasing carbon number, whereas the DHC-gpp model under-predicts SOA yields by an amount that decreases with decreasing carbon number. Results shown in Figure 3.6A also indicate that for internal alkenes the DHC-nv and DHC-gpp models both work very well at $\text{C}_{17}$ (and presumably at higher carbon numbers), but that for smaller carbon numbers they significantly over-predict SOA yields. This is due
Figure 3.6 Calculated and measured yields of SOA formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-alkenes and internal alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x}. The models assumed that secondary reaction products (A) did not or (B) did contribute to SOA mass and that dihydroxycarbonyls were either (gpp) in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium or (nv) entirely in the particle phase as non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, or dimers.
primarily to excess contributions from dihydroxycarboxylic acids, which in Figure 3.2A are shown to comprise only a small fraction of the SOA mass for the 7-tetradecene reaction. A plausible explanation for this excess is that the vapor pressures used in the model for dihydroxycarboxylic acids formed from reactions of internal alkenes are too low by a factor of ~3, which is equivalent to a decrease of ~1 carbon number. If the vapor pressures used in the DHC-gpp model were increased by this amount, then the model curve shown in Figure 3.6A would be shifted to the right by ~1 carbon number, and the agreement with measured yields would be quite good.

As expected, and as is shown in Figure 3.6B, including secondary reaction products in the models increases the calculated SOA yields. Above C_{13}, the DHC-gpp and DHC-nv models both over-predict SOA yields. Below C_{13}, the DHC-nv model over-predictions are larger and the DHC-gpp model under-predictions are smaller. The best region to compare these models is probably above C_{13}, since all the products are entirely in the particle phase and uncertainties due to gas-particle partitioning are therefore minimized. Results for that region suggest that secondary reaction products do not contribute significantly to SOA mass, since adding them to the model worsens the agreement between the calculated and measured SOA yields.
The observation that SOA yields measured for the reactions of 1-alkenes $< \text{C}_{13}$ are between those calculated using the DHC-gpp and DHC-nv models indicates that the formation of cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, and dimers from dihydroxycarbonyls is reversible. Mass spectra show peaks due to cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, and dimers formed from dihydroxycarbonyls at least as small as $\text{C}_9$, indicating that these reactions occur for the smallest compounds studied. If the reactions were irreversible, they should lead to complete gas-to-particle partitioning of dihydroxycarbonyls and therefore SOA yields similar to those calculated using the DHC-nv model. Conversely, reversible reactions should lead to some fraction of dihydroxycarbonyls existing in the gas phase in equilibrium with the non-volatile products, and SOA yields between those calculated using the two models, as observed here. These reversible reactions cannot be incorporated into the model in a rigorous way, since there are insufficient data to constrain the particle-phase equilibria between dihydroxycarbonyls and their various reaction products. Nonetheless, if, for example, one assumes that particle-phase reactions of dihydroxycarbonyls form only dimers, then this reaction can be added to the model and the equilibrium constant, $K \left( \text{m}^3 \mu \text{g}^{-1} \right) = [\text{dimer}]_p/[\text{dihydroxycarbonyl}]_p^2$, can be estimated by fitting to measured SOA yields. When this was done, a value of $\sim 5$ gave a
good fit (not shown). While this is not a chemically meaningful quantity, such an approach might be sufficiently accurate for some modeling purposes.

### 3.6 Conclusions

The very good agreement between calculated and measured SOA yields for reactions of large alkenes in which gas-to-particle partitioning of dihydroxycarbonyl, β-hydroxynitrate, dihydroxynitrate, and 1,4-hydroxynitrate products is essentially complete, indicates that the chemical mechanism developed here using measured product yields and structure-reactivity methods provides an accurate representation of the gas-phase chemistry. The model should therefore be useful in this partitioning regime. The divergence between model predictions (whether assuming gas-particle partitioning equilibrium or complete gas-to-particle partitioning of dihydroxycarboxyls) and measured SOA yields for smaller alkenes is problematic, however, and clearly demonstrates the challenges to be faced in incorporating particle-phase chemistry into this and other SOA models. Fortunately, for this system the gas-phase reaction products are sufficiently well known and few in number that the particle-phase reactants and products can be identified. In particular, dihydroxycarbonyls are shown to undergo a
number of reversible, particle-phase reactions to form lower volatility products. It appears that those containing a 1,4-hydroxyketone unit form cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans, whereas those containing a β-hydroxyaldehyde unit form hemiacetal dimers. Previous studies of similar OH radical-initiated reactions of alkanes (Lim and Ziemann, 2005) and of reactions of alkenes with NO₃ radicals (Gong et al., 2005) have also observed the formation of cyclic hemiacetals, while studies of alkene ozonolysis have observed that hydroperoxides can undergo intramolecular or intermolecular reactions with aldehydes to form cyclic (Ziemann, 2003) and linear peroxyhemiacetals (Tobias and Ziemann, 2000).

Accurate modeling of even the simple set of reactions identified here will require substantially more information on particle-phase kinetics and the effects of environmental variables, such as relative humidity and particle acidity, on the chemistry. For example, it was observed (though not shown here) that SOA formation was insensitive to changes in relative humidity but that adding ammonia reduced the formation of cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, and dimers, apparently by neutralizing nitric acid (formed by the OH + NO₂ reaction) that catalyzes the particle-phase reactions. Although acquiring such detailed information will be a challenge, it may be difficult to develop chemically
speciated SOA models that can be applied to the laboratory or atmosphere with confidence without a much greater understanding of these types of reactions. The current state of models for reactions of terpenes (Jenkin 2004) and aromatics (Johnson et al., 2004), in which SOA is known to contain significant amounts of oligomers (Tolocka et al., 2004; Docherty et al., 2005; Kalberer et al., 2004), is that the vapor pressures of gas-phase reaction products must be reduced by a few orders of magnitude below their calculated values in order to mimic the effects of particle-phase reactions on volatility and achieve good agreement with measured SOA yields.
3.7 References


Chapter 4

Yields of $\beta$-Hydroxynitrates, Dihydroxynitrates, and Trihydroxynitrates in Aerosol Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NO$_x$

4.1 Abstract

Yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of C$_9$-C$_{15}$ 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$ were measured using a thermal desorption particle beam mass spectrometer coupled to a high-performance liquid chromatograph (HPLC) with UV-vis detector for identification and quantification. When normalized for OH radical addition to the C=C double bond, yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates increased with carbon number primarily due to enhanced gas-to-particle partitioning to plateaus at C$_{14}$ or C$_{15}$ of 0.225 ± 0.007 and 0.055 ± 0.006 respectively. The ratio of 1-hydroxy/2-hydroxy $\beta$-hydroxynitrate isomers was 0.90:0.10. Average of C$_{14}$ and C$_{15}$ OH addition-normalized trihydroxynitrate yields were 0.042 ± 0.006. Calculations performed by combining yield measurements from this and a previous study of similar reactions of linear 1-alkenes and linear internal
alkenes (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009) indicate that the relative ratios for forming primary, secondary, and tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyalkyl radicals by OH radical addition to the double bond are 1.0:1.9:4.3, and the branching ratios for forming $\beta$-hydroxynitrates from reactions of primary, secondary, and tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals with NO are 0.12, 0.15, and 0.25. The effects of H$_2$O vapor and NH$_3$ on yields were also explored
4.2 Introduction

Hydrocarbons are emitted from both anthropogenic and biogenic sources. Approximately 90% of global emissions are biogenic hydrocarbons, with a large fraction of these being alkenes including isoprene and monoterpenes (Guenther et al., 1995).

Alkenes are oxidized in the atmosphere through reactions initiated by O₃, OH radicals, and NO₃ radicals, with reactions with OH radicals being the major daytime sink. As a result of these reactions, a large variety of oxygenated products are formed (Atkinson and Arey, 2003a; Calvert et al., 2000), some of which may have sufficiently low vapor pressures because of the addition of functional groups, to condense onto particles and form secondary organic aerosol (SOA) (Kroll and Seinfeld, 2008). SOA is known to comprise a large fraction of the mass of atmospheric fine particles (Zhang et al., 2007), and to have important impacts on human health (Englert, 2004), visibility (Finlayson-Pitts and Pitts, 2000), and global climate (Andreae and Crutzen, 1997), but significant uncertainties still exist regarding its sources (DeGouw and Jimenez, 2009). Modeling studies indicate that the products of isoprene and monoterpenene reactions are the major contributors to SOA mass on a global scale (Kanakidou et al., 2005) and that in urban areas, products of aromatic reactions are also thought to be important (perhaps dominant),
including those formed from reactions of first-generation, unsaturated ring-opened products (Johnson et al., 2004).

The basic steps (involving alkyl, peroxy, and alkoxy radicals) in the reactions by which alkenes are oxidized in the atmosphere are reasonably well understood (Atkinson and Arey, 2003a); however, few reaction products have been identified and even fewer quantified. This is understandable, since the mechanisms are complex and the products are many. In an effort to address this lack of fundamental knowledge on reaction mechanisms, we recently carried out a detailed study of the products and mechanism SOA formation from the OH radical-initiated reactions of linear alkenes in the presence of NOx (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009; Matsunaga et al., 2009). The reactions are sufficiently “simple” that we were able to identify nearly all the particle-phase products, and to quantify hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates. Using these results and some additional information from the literature, we were then able to develop a quantitative reaction mechanism and a model for SOA formation (Matsunaga et al., 2009). Recently, we extended these studies to similar reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes. To our knowledge, only the gas-phase products of the reaction of 2-methyl-1-propene have been measured (Tuazon et al., 1998). As is shown below, the presence of a methyl group on the C=C
double bond alters the reaction mechanism and products in interesting and important ways. The results should help in understanding the chemistry of some of the most abundant compounds in the atmosphere, since isoprene and the monoterpenes $\alpha$- and $\beta$-pinene, as well as sesquiterpenes and others, have this subunit in their structure.

4.3 Experimental Section

**Chemicals.** The following chemicals, with purities (when available) and suppliers, were used: 2-methyl-1-nonene (97%), 2-methyl-1-undecene (97%), 2-ethylhexyl nitrate (97%), chloroform-d (99.8 atom % D), 2-nonanone (99+%), and 2-octanone (98%) [Sigma-Aldrich], 2-methyl-1-octene (97%), 2-methyl-1-tridecene (99%), and 2-methyl-1-tetradecene (97%) [ChemSampCo], 2-methyl-1-decene (97%) and 2-methyl-1-dodecene (>97%) [Rieke Metals], dioctyl sebacate (≥97%) [Fluka], and NO [Matheson Tri Gas]. All chemicals were used without further purification. O$_3$ was generated using a Welsbach T-408 O$_3$ generator.

**Environmental Chamber Method.** Reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes with OH radicals in the presence of NO$_x$ were conducted in a ~5900 L PTFE environmental chamber at room temperature (~25 °C) and atmospheric pressure. The chamber, which
has blacklights covering two walls, was filled with clean, dry air (< 5 ppbv hydrocarbons, 
< 1% RH, < 50 ppbv NOx, < 10 ppbv O₃) from an Aadco clean air system. In a typical experiment, ~200 μg m⁻³ dioctyl sebacate seed particles generated by an evaporation-condensation apparatus were added to the chamber, 1 ppmv of alkene was evaporated from a glass bulb using gentle heating and flushed into the chamber in a clean air stream, and 5 ppmv each of methyl nitrite and NO were added. NO was added to the chamber to suppress O₃ and NO₃ radical formation. For 2-methyl-1-tetradecene, reactions were also performed at 50%RH and with 20 ppmv NH₃ in dry air.

The reactions were initiated by turning on the blacklights, which generates OH radicals by photolyzing methyl nitrite (Atkinson et al., 1981). The chamber was irradiated for 6 min, during which time 40-50% of the alkene reacted, NO decreased by 1-2 ppmv, and NOₓ stayed approximately constant. SOA formed within 1 min of turning on the blacklights. The average OH radical concentration estimated from the amounts of alkenes reacted and OH radical rate constants (Nishino et al., 2009) was ~3 x 10⁷ cm⁻³. O₃ was measured using a Dasibi model 1003-AH O₃ monitor and NO and NOₓ were measured using a Thermo Environmental Instruments Inc. 42C NO-NO₂-NOₓ analyzer.
Particle Mass Spectrometric Analysis. A thermal desorption particle beam mass spectrometer (TDPBMS) was used to analyze particle composition in real-time (Tobias et al., 2000) and by temperature-programmed thermal desorption (TPTD) (Tobias and Ziemann, 1999). Aerosols were sampled from the chamber through an aerodynamic lens (Liu et al., 1995a; Liu et al., 1995b), and the resulting beam impacted in a V-shaped notch in the tip of a gold-coated copper vaporizer rod coated with a nonstick polymer (Chattopadhyay and Ziemann, 2005). For real-time analyses, the rod was resistively heated to 160 °C. Particles were vaporized upon impact, and the vapor was ionized by 70 eV electrons and analyzed in an ABB Extrel MEXM 500 quadrupole mass spectrometer. For TPTD analysis, the vaporizer rod was cooled to -40 °C and particles were sampled for 30 min. The rod was allowed to warm to -5 °C and then heated to 200 °C with a computer controlled linear temperature ramp of 2 °C min\(^{-1}\). Compounds desorbed from the vaporizer according to their volatilities, allowing separation of components for mass spectral analysis. The mass spectrometer was typically scanned from \(m/\text{z} \) 40-500 in 30 s.

Aerosol Size Distribution and Alkene Analysis. Alkene concentrations were measured before and after reaction by using gas chromatography with flame ionization detection (GC-FID) to analyze samples collected on Tenax TA solid adsorbent
Analyses of replicate samples taken at 30 min intervals agreed within ±5% both before and after reaction, and the FID signals from alkenes collected before reaction were within ±5% of values expected for a 1 ppmv chamber concentration (based on solution calibration curves), so no wall loss corrections were necessary. Particle size distributions were measured every 2 min during reactions and filter sampling with a scanning mobility particle sizer (SMPS) (Wang and Flagan, 1990). The SMPS consists of a ²¹⁰Po bipolar charger, a long differential mobility analyzer similar design to the TSI model 3934, a TSI Model 3010 Condensation Particle Counter, and a scanning/inversion program developed by the McMurry group at the University of Minnesota for use with Labview software. A microliter syringe and balance were used to measure a density of 1.1 g cm⁻³ for the dried SOA filter extract from a reaction of 2-methyl-1-tridecene without seed aerosol. Aerosol mass yields [aerosol formed (µg m⁻³)/alkene reacted (µg m⁻³)] were calculated using the aerosol volume concentration calculated from SMPS data, the measured SOA density, and the mass of reacted alkene calculated from GC-FID data.

**Hydroxynitrinate Analysis.** After each reaction, filter samples were collected for 2 h on Millipore filters (1.0 µm pore size, Fluoropore FALP, 47 mm, without pretreatment) at ~15 L min⁻¹. The collection efficiency of these filters was determined to be the same as
0.45 μm pore size filters, but had the advantage of a smaller pressure drop. This was helpful, since the sampling flow rate was controlled by a calibrated critical orifice located between the filter holder and a vacuum pump, and corrections for the reduction in flow that occurred as the filter accumulated sample were minimized (< 5-10%) by using the 1.0 μm pore size filters. Filter samples were extracted immediately or stored at -20 °C, and stored samples were extracted within 1 week of collection because it was determined that all hydroxynitrates were stable for at least this period of time. Samples extracted after 1 month showed losses of β-hydroxynitrates (but not the other hydroxynitrates) due to decomposition. Filters were extracted twice with 4 mL of ethyl acetate at room temperature for >10 min, the extracts were combined, dried with N₂, and, depending on the aerosol mass collected, re-dissolved in 30-50 μL ethyl acetate. Tests carried out using different solvents, sonication, multiple extractions, and filter spiking indicated recovery rates were 90-100%.

Extracts were analyzed using an Agilent 1100 Series HPLC coupled to a UV-Vis diode array detector at 210 nm, a wavelength at which nitrate absorbs strongly (Docherty and Ziemann, 2006). The HPLC contained a 250 x 4.6 mm Zorbax 5 μm XDB-C18 column that operated at room temperature. The HPLC method employed gradient elution
using water and acetonitrile, with the contribution of acetonitrile to the mobile phase
maintained at 50% for 10 min and then increasing linearly to 100% in 50 min. The flow
rate was 1 mL min\(^{-1}\) and the sample injection volume was 10 µL. Hydroxynitrates were
quantified using three calibration curves prepared using a mixture of either β-
hydroxynitrate isomers, dihydroxynitrate isomers, or trihydroxynitrate isomers formed
from a 2-methyl-1-tridecene reaction. The purified mixtures of each class of
hydroxynitrate used to prepare the curves were obtained by collecting aliquots of the
appropriate mixture after it had passed through the UV-Vis detector. Purities of the
standards were verified by HPLC analysis. The molar yield of organic nitrate in particles
was calculated as \((\text{moles of compound collected on filter/volume of air sampled})\)
\((\text{aerosol mass concentration after reaction/average aerosol mass concentration during filter}
\text{sampling})/\text{(moles of alkene reacted per volume of air)}\). The term containing aerosol mass
concentrations is to collect for the wall loss of aerosols during filter sampling, and the
aerosol mass concentrations were measured with an SMPS. The molar absorptivities of
the β-hydroxynitrate, dihydroxynitrate, and trihydroxynitrate standards relative to 2-
ethylhexyl nitrate were 0.412, 0.964, and 0.608, respectively. The values measured
previously for β-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates (no trihydroxynitrates were
observed) formed from the reaction of 1-tetradecene were 0.786 and 0.963 (Matsunaga
and Ziemann, 2009). It is worth noting that these data exhibit some interesting trends that
can be explained by hydrogen bonding, which is known to affect UV absorption (Pavia
et al., 2001). The lower molar absorptivities of hydroxynitrates compared to alkyl nitrates
indicates that hydrogen bonding with hydroxy groups reduces absorption by the nitrooxy
group. The effect is smallest for dihydroxynitrates (0.963 and 0.964), apparently because
the hydroxy groups are on adjacent carbon atoms and so preferentially bond to each other.
The effect is larger for trihydroxynitrates (0.608), since the third hydroxy group is located
three carbon atoms away from the other hydroxy groups and so is relatively free to bond
to the nitrooxy group. The largest effect is observed for β-hydroxynitrates in which the
nitrooxy group is on a tertiary carbon atom adjacent to the carbon atom on which the
hydroxy group is located (0.412), and the effect is reduced when the nitrooxy group is
instead on a secondary carbon atom (0.786).

Hydroxynitrates were identified from particle mass spectra obtained by coupling
the HPLC to the TDPBMS via a Collison atomizer. Effluent from the HPLC column was
atomized, the solvent was removed as the drops passed through activated charcoal and
silica gel diffusion dryers, and the remaining hydroxynitrate particles were analyzed in
the TDPBMS. Identifications were verified by $^1$H NMR analysis of purified samples using a Varian Inova 500 MHz instrument.

4.4 Results and Discussion

**Reaction Mechanism.** The mechanism of the reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes with OH radicals in the presence of NO$_x$ is developed based on previous studies of OH-radical initiated reactions of alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$ (Atkinson and Arey, 2003b; Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009; Matsunaga et al., 2009) and is shown in Figure 4.1, where R represents an alkyl group. In Figure 4.1, $\alpha_i$ is the branching ratio for the reaction of a specie by pathway $i$, defined as $\alpha_i = r_i / \Sigma r_i$, where $r_i$ is the reaction rate for pathway $i$ and the sum is over all pathways for the specie and equal to 1. The focus here is on quantifying branching ratios $\alpha_{C=C}$ and $\alpha_1 - \alpha_6$, so only these are discussed below; the others are discussed in Chapter 5. The reaction is initiated either by addition of an OH radical to the C=C double bond ($\alpha_{C=C}$) or abstraction of a H atom ($1 - \alpha_{C=C}$). The reactions that follow H-atom abstraction are the same as those that occur in OH-radical initiated reactions of alkanes, and are described elsewhere (Atkinson and Arey, 2003a; Lim and
Figure 4.1 Mechanism of the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$. 
Ziemann, 2009). For the OH radical addition pathway, addition can occur at either carbon of the C=C double bond to form a pair of \( \beta \)-hydroxyalkyl radical isomers. The branching ratios for addition to the first and second carbon atoms are \( \alpha_1 \) and \( \alpha_2 \), with \( \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 = \alpha_{C=C} \).

The \( \beta \)-hydroxyalkyl radicals react with \( O_2 \) to form \( \beta \)-hydroxyperoxy radicals that then react with NO to form \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates \([P1, P2]\) with branching ratios \( \alpha_3 \) and \( \alpha_4 \), or \( \beta \)-hydroxyalkoxy radicals with branching ratios \( \alpha_5 \) and \( \alpha_6 \). Note that \( \alpha_3 + \alpha_5 = 1 \) and \( \alpha_4 + \alpha_6 = 1 \), and that \( \alpha_4 \) and \( \alpha_6 \) (not shown in Figure 4.1) correspond to \( \alpha_3 \) and \( \alpha_5 \) except they are associated with reactions of 2-hydroxy isomers instead of 1-hydroxy isomers.

The term “same pathways” that appears in Figure 4.1 is associated with species derived from reactions of 2-hydroxyalkyl radicals (left-hand side of Figure 4.1), and is meant to refer the reader to the corresponding species derived from reactions of 1-hydroxy isomers (right-hand side of Figure 4.1) for detailed mechanisms.

The \( \beta \)-hydroxyalkoxy radicals react with \( O_2 \), decompose, or isomerize through a 6-member ring transition state. Reaction of the 2-hydroxyalkoxy radical with \( O_2 \) forms an \( \alpha \)-hydroxycarbonyl \([P4]\), but this pathway is not accessible to the 1-hydroxyalkoxy radical because there is no H atom available on the second carbon atom for abstraction by \( O_2 \). Decomposition followed by reaction with \( O_2 \) forms formaldehyde \([P5]\) and a ketone.
[P6], and isomerization followed by reaction with O\textsubscript{2} forms dihydroxyperoxy radicals that then react (similar to the \(\beta\)-hydroxyperoxy radicals) with NO to form either dihydroxynitrates or dihydroxyalkoxy radicals.

The dihydroxyalkoxy radicals can isomerize in two different ways. Those derived from reactions of 2-hydroxyalkoxy radicals primarily undergo a rapid “reverse” isomerization in which the alkoxy group abstracts an H atom from the terminal carbon atom, and then reaction with O\textsubscript{2} forms a dihydroxycarbonyl [P13] (Atkinson, 2007). A very minor isomerization pathway involves abstraction of an H-atom from a CH\textsubscript{2} group further along the carbon chain followed by reaction with O\textsubscript{2} to form trihydroxyperoxy radicals, which then react by pathways similar to those described above for dihydroxyperoxy radicals to form trihydroxynitrates [P10] and trihydroxycarbonyls [P12]. In the case of dihydroxyalkoxy radicals derived from reactions of 1-hydroxyalkoxy radicals, reverse isomerization cannot occur because there is no H atom for abstraction on the second carbon atom. Isomerization therefore continues along the carbon chain, leading to the formation of trihydroxynitrates [P9] and trihydroxycarbonyls [P11].

**SOA Product Identification.** The TDPBMS real-time mass spectrum and thermal desorption profiles of selected single ions of the aerosol products formed from
Figure 4.2 (A) Real-time TDPBMS mass spectra and (B) thermal desorption profiles for SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene in dry air in the presence of NOx. Thermal desorption profiles were smoothed and normalized to peak values.
the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x} are shown in Figure 4.2. Desorption profiles are normalized to the maximum values. The desorption temperature of a compound is related to the compound vapor pressure, and in general, compounds with lower vapor pressures have higher desorption temperatures.

The total ion (TI) signal is approximately proportional to aerosol mass (Crable and Coggeshall, 1958), so the relative intensities of peaks in a TI profile are indicative of the relative abundance of the aerosol compounds associated with those peaks. In Figure 4.2, the TI profile has three major peaks or shoulders at approximately 57, 77, and 100 °C, indicating the presence of at least (since some compounds may have similar desorption temperatures) three major SOA products. These peaks overlap with peaks in the \textit{m/z} 46 profile, which is due to NO\textsubscript{2}\textsuperscript{+} and is characteristic of organic nitrates. The absence of non-nitrate compounds more volatile than the three organic nitrates is consistent with the expectation that formaldehyde [P5] and ketones [P6] are too volatile to be in particles.

The large high mass peaks observed at \textit{m/z} 213, \textit{m/z} 211, and \textit{m/z} 272 in the real-time mass spectrum are associated with the compounds that desorb at 57, 77, and 100 °C, respectively, and are assigned to \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates. This assignment is consistent with the three nitrate products expected
for this reaction (Figure 4.1), whose vapor pressures progressively decrease due to the presence of one, two, and three hydroxy groups.

This assignment also agrees with the results of HPLC-TDPBMS analysis shown in Figure 4.3. For convenience, the following notation will be used here for the structures of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates. In the notation, hydroxy and nitrooxy groups are designated H and N, the location of a group on a carbon chain is designated by a number before a letter, and the number of carbons in the chain plus the methyl group are indicated by a subscript number following the letter C. For example, 1,2-dihydroxy-4-nitrooxy-2-methyltetradecane is designated $1,2\text{H}^4\text{NC}_{15}$. The chromatogram shown in Figure 4.3A was taken under reverse phase conditions, so polar compounds have earlier retention times. The three peaks are assigned in order of increasing retention time and decreasing polarity as (1) trihydroxynitrates, (2) dihydroxynitrates, and (3) $\beta$-hydroxynitrates. The structures of the compounds were verified by $^1\text{H}$ NMR analysis; the chemical shifts are presented in Appendix Table C.2. The small, partially resolved peak at the front of peak 3 in Figure 4.3A indicates that one isomer dominates in $\beta$-hydroxynitrates. On the basis of $^1\text{H}$ NMR analysis the major isomer was determined to be $1\text{H}2\text{NC}_{15}$, and from the ratio of the chromatographic peak
Figure 4.3 (A) HPLC-UV chromatogram and HPLC-TDPBMS mass spectra of (B) trihydroxynitrates, (C) dihydroxynitrates, and (D) $\beta$-hydroxynitrates formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene in dry air in the presence of NO$_x$. 
areas the relative amounts of the $1\text{H}2\text{NC}_{15}$ and $1\text{N}2\text{HC}_{15}$ isomers was determined to be 90:10.

The mass spectra shown in Figure 4.3B and 4.3C are the mass spectra of the mixtures of the isomers of trihydroxynitrate and dihydroxynitrate, respectively. Figure 4.3D is the mass spectrum of the mixture of the isomers of $\beta$-hydroxynitrate, but the major peaks in Figure 4.3D should represent the mass spectrum of the major isomer, $1\text{H}2\text{NC}_{15}$. The spectra verify the assertion made above that $m/z$ 213, $m/z$ 211, and $m/z$ 272 in Figure 4.2A are characteristic of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates. The other major peaks, $m/z$ 223 and $m/z$ 225, are assigned to non-nitrate organic compounds and are discussed in Chapter 5. The major fragmentation channel for compounds having two adjacent functional groups is scission of the C-C bond between the two groups (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009; Gong et al., 2005). The major ions observed for the dihydroxynitrates and trihydroxynitrates can be explained as being formed through this fragmentation channel. The molecular weight of the dihydroxynitrates is 305, and $m/z$ 211 is likely a $[\text{M}-(31+63)]^+$ ion formed by losing $\text{CH}_2\text{OH}$ and $\text{HNO}_3$, and the $m/z$ 193 ion is then formed by the additional loss of $\text{H}_2\text{O}$. The molecular weight of trihydroxynitrates is 321, and $m/z$ 272 is likely $[\text{M}-(31+18)]^+$.
ion formed by losing CH\textsubscript{2}OH and H\textsubscript{2}O. The molecular weight of the β-hydroxynitrates is 289, and fragmentation of 1H2N2MC\textsubscript{13} gives the \textit{m/z} 213 ion which is likely a [M-(30 + 46)]\textsuperscript{+} ion formed by losing CH\textsubscript{2}O and NO\textsubscript{2}. Transfer of an H atom from the CH\textsubscript{2}OH scission product to the ion forms more stable products: a CH\textsubscript{3}(CH\textsubscript{2})\textsubscript{11}C(CH\textsubscript{3})=OH\textsuperscript{+} ion and formaldehyde (McLafferty and Tureček, 1993).

**β-Hydroxynitrate Yields.** The molar yields (moles of product formed per mole of alkene reacted) of β-hydroxynitrates are presented in Appendix Table C.1. Losses of β-hydroxynitrates due to secondary reactions with OH radicals were neglected because the estimated losses using a model that accounted for decreased reactivity in particles were ≤ 5%. The Table contains yields without and with normalization for the fraction of OH-radical addition that occurs by addition to the C=C double bond, \(\alpha_{C=C} = k_{\text{add}} / (k_{\text{add}} + k_{\text{abs}})\), where \(k_{\text{abs}}\) and \(k_{\text{add}}\) are the rate constants for H-atom abstraction and OH-radical addition, respectively. Values of \(k_{\text{abs}}\) (Kwok and Atkinson, 1995) and \(k_{\text{add}}\) (Nishino et al., 2009) were calculated using equations developed by Atkinson and co-workers from measured rate constant data for 2-methyl-1-alkenes: \(k_{\text{abs}} = 2.6 + 1.4 \times (C_n - 6)\) and \(k_{\text{add}} = 51 + 16 \times [1 - \exp(-0.35 \times (C_n - 3))]\), where \(C_n\) is the alkene carbon number and the units of \(k_{\text{add}}\) and \(k_{\text{abs}}\) are \(10^{-12}\) cm\textsuperscript{3} molecule\textsuperscript{-1} s\textsuperscript{-1}. Values of \(k_{\text{add}}\) and \(k_{\text{abs}}\) increase with increasing \(C_n\), but
because for the C$_9$-C$_{15}$ alkenes $k_{\text{abs}}$ increases more than $k_{\text{add}}$, $\alpha_{C=C}$ decreases from 0.91 at C$_9$ to 0.81 at C$_{15}$. As a result, OH addition-normalized yields are ~10-20% higher than those that have not been normalized. Also, values of $\alpha_{C=C}$ are larger for 2-methyl-1-alkenes compared to the corresponding 1-alkenes (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009), indicating that the presence of a methyl group on the C=C double bond increases $\alpha_{C=C}$.

The molar yields of the individual $\beta$-hydroxynitrate isomers in the particle phase, without and with normalization for OH radical addition, and their sum are presented in Figure 4.4. Values increase with increasing carbon number, primarily because the vapor pressures decrease and so compounds partition more to the particle phase where they can be measured (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009). As we discuss briefly below and more thoroughly in a future publication, recent measurements indicate that semi-volatile compounds having a significant gas-phase component also partition to the chamber walls. This likely contributes to the decrease in yield below C$_{14}$, which is slightly more rapid than predicted by gas-particle partitioning theory (Pankow, 1994). The branching ratio for $\beta$-hydroxynitrate formation from the reaction of $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals with NO also increases with carbon number, but this effect is minor for the C$_9$-C$_{15}$ compounds studied here (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009). The total yields appear to reach a plateau at about
Figure 4.4 Molar yields of (A) total of both $\beta$-hydroxynitrate isomers, (B) $1H2NC_n$, and (C) $1N2HC_n$ formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO$_x$ with normalization for the fraction of the OH radical reaction that occurred by addition to the double bond. The dashed curve through the yields was drawn to aid the eye.
C\textsubscript{14} or C\textsubscript{15}, where the small difference in yields is within measurement uncertainty. The C\textsubscript{15} yields are 0.183 ± 0.005 and 0.225 ± 0.007 without and with normalization for OH radical addition, with reported uncertainties of one standard deviation. We believe that at this plateau these compounds are almost entirely in the particle phase, so the yields are essentially gas + particle values. In our previous measurements of the yields of \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates formed from reactions of 1-alkenes (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009) a plateau was also reached at \(\sim\)C\textsubscript{14}, but there it was possible to observe that the plateau continued out to C\textsubscript{17} because larger 1-alkenes were available for that study. To our knowledge, only Tuazon et al. (1998) have quantified the yield of \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates for a similar reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes, obtaining a value of \(\sim\)0.09 ± 0.03 (all products in the gas phase) for the reaction of 2-methyl-1-propene. This value is about half the plateau value measured here, as expected because of the much lower branching ratio at this small carbon number. The 1H2NC\textsubscript{n} isomer comprises \(\sim\)90\% of the total \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates, so as expected the plot of the yields looks similar to that of the \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates and appears to reach a plateau at C\textsubscript{14} or C\textsubscript{15}. The yields of the 1N2HC\textsubscript{n} isomer are more difficult to interpret; they may reach a plateau at C\textsubscript{15}, but this could not be verified because larger 2-methyl-1-alkenes were not available (the vapor pressure of
commercially available 2-methyl-1-heptadecene is too low to carry out a gas-phase reaction). Nonetheless, on the basis of vapor pressures, the yield of the 1N2HC\textsubscript{15} isomer should be close to a plateau. In our study of \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates formed from reactions of 1-alkenes (Matsunaga et al., 2009), we estimated that the vapor pressures of 1N2HC\textsubscript{n} isomers are \(\sim\)3 times larger than those of 1H2NC\textsubscript{n} isomers, equivalent to the effect of having one less CH\textsubscript{2} unit. The partitioning of the 1N2HC\textsubscript{15} isomer should therefore be similar to that of the 1H2NC\textsubscript{14} isomer, which because it has essentially the same yield as the 1H2N2C\textsubscript{15} isomer, appears to be almost entirely in the particle phase. The yields without and with normalization for OH radical addition are 0.164 ± 0.005 and 0.202 ± 0.007 for the 1H2NC\textsubscript{15} isomer and 0.019 ± 0.001 and 0.023 ± 0.001 for the 1N2HC\textsubscript{15} isomer, and the relative amounts of these two isomers are 0.90 and 0.10.

The plateau value of the OH addition-normalized yields of \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates formed from 2-methyl-1-alkene reactions, 0.202, is slightly higher than the value of 0.162 measured for reactions of linear-1-alkenes but is much lower than the value of \(\sim\)0.3 estimated from measurements of secondary alkyl nitrates formed from reactions of \(n\)-alkane (Arey et al., 2001). The lower yields of \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates from the reactions of 1-alkenes is thought to be caused by weakening of the O-O bond in the \(\beta\)-hydroxyperoxy...
radical-NO intermediate, RCO-O-NO, due to hydrogen bonding between the hydroxy and peroxy groups (O’Brien et al., 1998). The presence of a methyl group on the same carbon atom as the peroxy group (the structure for ~90% of the β-hydroxyperoxy radicals formed from reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes) appears to compensate somewhat for the effect of the hydroxy group, presumably by strengthening the O-O bond through electron donation.

**Branching Ratios.** As shown in Figure 4.1, the yield, Y, of a compound is equal to the product of the branching ratios along the pathway by which it is formed. For the β-hydroxynitrates 1H2NC\(_n\) [P1] and 1H2NC\(_n\) [P2], this means that \(Y_{P1} = \alpha_1 \times \alpha_3\) and \(Y_{P2} = \alpha_2 \times \alpha_4\), and therefore that \((\alpha_1/\alpha_{c=c}) = (Y_{P1}/\alpha_{c=c})/\alpha_3\) and \((\alpha_2/\alpha_{c=c}) = (Y_{P2}/\alpha_{c=c})/\alpha_4\). The values of \(Y_{P1}/\alpha_{c=c}\) and \(Y_{P2}/\alpha_{c=c}\) are the OH addition-normalized yields reported above. In our previous study of the reactions of linear 1-alkenes, we solved for these two equations simultaneously for values of the four branching ratios by assuming that \(\alpha_3/\alpha_4\), which is ratio of the branching ratios for the formation of β-hydroxynitrates from reactions of NO with secondary and primary β-hydroxyperoxy radicals, is either 1 or 1.5 (Cassanelli et al., 2007). Here, we combine our measured yields from reactions of linear internal alkenes, linear 1-alkenes, and 2-methyl-1-alkenes to estimate (1) the branching ratios for the
formation of primary, secondary, and tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals by OH radical
addition to a C=C double bond, and (2) the branching ratios for the formation of $\beta$-
hydroxynitrates from the reactions of these $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals with NO. Starting
with linear internal alkenes, for which two secondary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals are
formed, $(\alpha_1/\alpha_{c=c}) = (\alpha_2/\alpha_{c=c}) = 0.5$ and $\alpha_3 = \alpha_4 = (Y_{P1}/\alpha_{c=c}) + (Y_{P2}/\alpha_{c=c}) = 0.15$. Using $\alpha_3$
= 0.15 for the secondary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals formed from 1-alkenes gives $(\alpha_1/\alpha_{c=c})$
= $(Y_{P1}/\alpha_{c=c})/\alpha_3 = 0.098/0.15 = 0.65$, so that for the primary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals
formed from this reaction $(\alpha_2/\alpha_{c=c}) = 1 - (\alpha_1/\alpha_{c=c}) = 0.35$ and $\alpha_4 = (Y_{P2}/\alpha_{c=c})/(\alpha_2/\alpha_{c=c}) =$
0.042/0.35 = 0.12. Using these values for the primary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals formed
from 2-methyl-1-alkenes gives $(\alpha_2/\alpha_{c=c}) = (Y_{P2}/\alpha_{c=c})/\alpha_4 = 0.023/0.12 = 0.19$, so that for
the tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals formed in this reaction $(\alpha_1/\alpha_{c=c}) = 1 - (\alpha_2/\alpha_{c=c})$
= 0.81 and $\alpha_3 = (Y_{P1}/\alpha_{c=c})/(\alpha_1/\alpha_{c=c}) = 0.202/0.81 = 0.25$. The branching ratios of 0.35 and
0.65 for the formation of primary and secondary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals from reactions
of linear 1-alkenes agree very well with the values of 0.65 and 0.35 measured by
Cvetanovic (1976) for 1-propene. The branching ratios of 0.19 and 0.81 for the formation
of primary and tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals from reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes
agree reasonably well with the values of 0.08 and 0.92 calculated using the structure-
activity method of Peeters et al. (2007). These branching ratios can be combined to give relative ratios for forming primary, secondary, and tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyalkyl radicals by OH radical addition to the double bond of 1.0:1.9:4.3. This result indicates that OH radical-addition to a C=C double bond preferentially forms the most stable $\beta$-hydroxyalkyl radicals, which follow the order: tertiary $>$ secondary $>$ primary.

The branching ratios of 0.12, 0.15, and 0.25 for $\beta$-hydroxynitrate formation from reactions of primary, secondary, and tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals with NO correspond to secondary/primary and tertiary/primary ratios of 1.3 and 2.1. These values bracket well the values of 1.5 measured by Cassanelli et al. (2007) for the corresponding alkylperoxy radicals, although our results indicate an enhancement in the branching ratios for tertiary compared to secondary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals. From the results obtained here, the stability of the $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radical-NO intermediate in the formation of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates follows the order: tertiary $>$ secondary $>$ primary.

**Dihydroxynitrate and Trihydroxynitrate Yields.** The total (sum of isomers) molar yields of dihydroxynitrates and trihydroxynitrates are presented in Appendix Table C.1. Total yields are presented because isomers could not be resolved, and for the trihydroxynitrates only the $C_{14}$ and $C_{15}$ compounds could be analyzed because for the
smaller ones the peak overlapped with the solvent peak. As shown in Figure 4.5, the yields of dihydroxynitrates increase with increasing carbon number to a plateau at C\textsubscript{14} or C\textsubscript{15}. The yields of C\textsubscript{15} dihydroxynitrates without and with normalization for OH radical-addition are 0.045 ± 0.005 and 0.055 ± 0.006. The yields decrease with decreasing carbon number less slowly than those of the \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates because of lower vapor pressures and therefore enhanced partitioning to particles. The average yields of the C\textsubscript{14} and C\textsubscript{15} trihydroxynitrates, which are expected to be at a plateau since the more volatile dihydroxynitrates are at these carbon numbers, without and with normalization for OH-addition are 0.034 ± 0.005 and 0.042 ± 0.006.

**Effects of Humidity and Ammonia on \(\beta\)-Hydoxynitrate, Dihydroxynitrate, and Trihydroxynitrate Yields.** Experiments were also performed to investigate the possible effects of H\textsubscript{2}O vapor and NH\textsubscript{3} on the yields of \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates. Both are important atmospheric gases capable of forming complexes with peroxy radicals by hydrogen bonding (Clark et al., 2008; Bil and Latajka, 2005), and in previous studies of similar reactions of 1-tetradecene it was observed that yields of \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates were reduced by ~75% in the presence in NH\textsubscript{3} but were not affected by H\textsubscript{2}O vapor (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009).
**Figure 4.5** Molar yields of dihydroxynitrates formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO\(_x\) with normalization for the fraction of the OH radical reaction that occurred by addition to the double bond. The dashed curve through the yields was drawn to aid the eye.
Yields measured for reactions of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene in dry air, dry air in the presence of 20 ppmv NH$_3$, and 50% RH, are shown in Table 4.1. The yields of dihydroxynitrates and trihydroxynitrates were the same under all conditions, whereas the yields of 1N2HC$_{15}$ and 1H2NC$_{15}$ appear to have been reduced by about 15% and 8% by NH$_3$ and the yield of 1H2NC$_{15}$ increased by ~20% in the reaction at 50% RH (compared to dry air).

The presence of a methyl group on the second carbon atom significantly reduces the effect of NH$_3$ on both $\beta$-hydroxyxirate and dihydroxynitrate yields (compared to the 75% decrease observed for the 1-tetradecen reaction), most likely by reducing the extent of hydrogen bonding between hydroxy and the peroxy groups. Whether this is due to electronic or steric effects is not clear. The observation that in reactions of linear 1-alkenes and 2-methyl-1-alkenes only the yield of the 1H2NC$_{15}$ isomer was higher at 50% RH, and that the yields of all the other products were unaffected, indicates that the presence of a methyl group on the second carbon atom impacts the yield through electronic effects. Apparently, electron donation by the methyl group enhances clustering of H$_2$O to the $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radical-NO intermediate, RCO-O-NO, and this strengthens the O-NO bond, possibly by reducing hydrogen bonding between the hydroxy and peroxy groups. We previously estimated that only ~1% of $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy...
Table 4.1 Effects of Experimental Conditions on Molar Yields of $\beta$-Hydroxynitrates, Dihydroxynitrates, and Trihydroxynitrates Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Tetradecene in the Presence of NO$_x$.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>condition$^a$</th>
<th>1H2NC$_{15}$</th>
<th>1N2HC$_{15}$</th>
<th>dihydroxynitrates$^b$</th>
<th>trihydroxynitrates$^c$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Dry</td>
<td>0.164</td>
<td>0.019</td>
<td>0.044</td>
<td>0.032</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H$_2$O</td>
<td>0.198</td>
<td>0.019</td>
<td>0.040</td>
<td>0.032</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH$_3$</td>
<td>0.152</td>
<td>0.016</td>
<td>0.041</td>
<td>0.030</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$Dry = $<$1% RH; H$_2$O = 50% RH; NH$_3$ = 20 ppmv NH$_3$.

$^b$Dihydroxynitrates are 1,2H$_4$NC$_{15}$ and 1,2H$_5$NC$_{15}$.

$^c$Trihydroxynitrates are 1,2,4H$_7$NC$_{15}$ and 1,2,5H$_8$NC$_{15}$.
radicals formed from reactions of linear 1-alkenes are complexed with H₂O at 50% RH (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009).

4.5 Conclusions.

In this study, β-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of C₉-C₁₅ 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NOₓ were identified and quantified and the results used to calculate yields without and with normalization for OH radical addition to the C=C double bond. Comparison with the results of our previous study of similar reactions of linear 1-alkenes (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009) shows that seemingly small changes in alkene structure can significantly impact product yields and the reaction mechanism. In this case, replacement of an H atom by a methyl group on the second carbon atom resulted in different relative yields for the two β-hydroxynitrile isomers, increased OH-addition normalized yields of β-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates, with the latter not being observed previously, and also altered the effect of H₂O vapor and NH₃ on yields. Yields not normalized for OH-addition increased even more, because of enhanced OH radical addition relative to H-atom abstraction (Nishino et al., 2009). The effects are apparently
due to the electron donating properties of the methyl group, which helps to stabilize both the tertiary β-hydroxyalkoxy radical formed when an OH radical adds to the terminal carbon atom, leading to a strong preference for that addition pathway, and the β-hydroxyperoxy radical-NO intermediate, thereby enhancing β-hydroxynitrate formation. Electron donation by the methyl groups possibly increases yields of dihydroxynitrates by reducing hydrogen bonding between hydroxy and peroxy groups, which otherwise tends to reduce yields (O’Brien et al., 1998), and trihydroxynitrates appear in these reactions because the replacement of an H atom by a methyl group forces dihydroxyalkoxy radicals to isomerize by an alternate pathway.

Calculations carried out using β-hydroxynitrate yields (measured at the high carbon number plateau, where carbon number does not impact values) for reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes, linear 1-alkenes, and linear internal alkenes, reported here and previously (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009), indicate that the relative ratios for forming primary, secondary, and tertiary β-hydroxyalkyl radicals by OH radical addition to the C=C double bond are 1.0:1.9:4.3, and the branching ratios for forming β-hydroxynitrates from the reactions of primary, secondary, and tertiary β-hydroxyperoxy radicals with NO are 0.12, 0.15, and 0.25, corresponding to relative ratios of 1.0:1.3:2.1. These values
should be applicable to other systems; for example, the predicted yield of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates from the reaction of $\alpha$-pinene, which forms a primary and a tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyalkyl radical and then the corresponding $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals, is 0.23, in good agreement with a measured total organic nitrate yield of 0.18 (Nozière et al., 1999). Some of the overestimate may be due to the assumption that all reaction occurs by OH radical addition. As we have shown previously for the reactions of linear 1-alkenes (Matsuanga et al., 2009), measured yields of hydroxynitrates can be combined with yields of carbonyl decomposition products and results of structure-reactivity calculations to develop a complete reaction mechanism, which can then be used with gas-particle partitioning theory to model SOA formation. A quantitative reaction mechanism and SOA model developed for reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes will be the topic of a future publication.
4.6 Reference


Liu, P., Ziemann, P. J., Kittelson, D. B., McMurry, P. H., 1995b. Generating Particle Beams of Controlled Dimensions and Divergence .2. Experimental Evaluation of Particle


Chapter 5

Development of a Chemically-Speciated Model of Secondary Organic Aerosol

Formation from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the

Presence of NO$_x$

5.1 Abstract

The chemistry of secondary organic aerosol (SOA) formation from OH radical-

initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$ was investigated in an

environmental chamber. SOA was composed primarily of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates,

dihydroxynitrates, trihydroxynitrates, dihydroxycarbonyls, trihydroxycarbonyls, cyclic

hemiacetals, and dihydrofurans formed by addition of OH radicals to the C=C double

bond, with H-atom abstraction products being much less abundant. The simultaneous

observation of dihydroxycarbonyls, trihydroxycarbonyls, cyclic hemiacetals, and

dihydrofurans in SOA indicates that these compounds coexist in the particle phase,

possibly in equilibrium. No dihydroxycarbonyl dimers were observed, unlike SOA

formed from similar reactions of 1-alkenes. This can be explained by electron donation

by the 2-methyl group, which stabilizes the zwitterionic resonance form of the carbonyl
group and thereby reduces the tendency of the $\beta$-hydroxycarbonyls to form hemiacetal
dimers. A quantitative chemical reaction mechanism was developed using branching
ratios calculated from measured product yields and kinetic data from the literature, and
was combined with vapor pressures estimated from measurements of gas-particle particle
partitioning and structure-activity relationships to create a model for calculating SOA
composition and yield. Calculated SOA yields were significantly higher than measured
values, indicating that the original mechanism was missing important alkoxy radical
decomposition reactions that lead to the formation of volatile products that do not form
SOA. It is therefore proposed that trihydroxy and tetrahydroxy $\alpha$-hydroxyalkyl radical
intermediates react to a large extent with $O_2$ and NO to form the corresponding alkoxy
radicals, which then decompose, resulting in significantly less SOA than would otherwise
be formed. These reactions need to be incorporated into the mechanism along with more
detailed representations of H-atom abstraction and secondary reactions to create a more
complete model for calculating SOA composition and yield.
5.2 Introduction

Modeling the composition and mass concentration of atmospheric secondary organic aerosol (SOA) is important for predicting the impacts of particles on human health (Englert, 2004), visibility (Finlayson-Pitts and Pitts, 2000), and global climate (Kanakidou et al., 2005). The major requirements for SOA modeling are data on emissions of volatile organic compounds (VOCs), primary organic aerosol particles, and NOx, meteorology, and process models for describing transport and the atmospheric chemistry of VOCs and aerosols. Current models tend to underestimate atmospheric SOA mass concentrations by up to an order of magnitude or more (Johnson et al., 2006; Henze et al., 2008; de Gouw et al., 2005; Heald et al., 2006; Volkamer et al., 2006), for reasons that include inadequate information on the chemistry of VOCs and aerosols. To simplify SOA modeling, VOCs are generally lumped into a few classes based on compound reactivity and source, such as terpenes (Kanakidou et al., 2005), but this approach may lose important sources of SOA. For example, we recently reported large differences in SOA yields from reactions of linear, branched, and cyclic alkanes with the same carbon number (Lim and Ziemann 2009a), indicating that these compounds would best be treated separately in a model. Other sources of uncertainty are the vapor pressures used to
model partitioning of compounds between the gas and particle phases, particle-phase activity coefficients, and the possible role of particle-phase oligomer-forming reactions.

Recently, we developed a quantitative mechanism for OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-alkenes in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x} and incorporated this into an SOA model (Matsunaga et al., 2009). The model predicted well the yields of SOA formed from reactions of large 1-alkenes, for which accurate gas-particle partitioning calculations were not important because the major products had sufficiently low vapor pressures to partition almost entirely to the particle phase. As the carbon number decreased and products became more volatile, however, uncertainties in gas-particle partitioning due to the effects of particle-phase reactions on product vapor pressures led to significant discrepancies between measured and predicted yields. In the study presented here, a quantitative mechanism was developed for similar reactions of C\textsubscript{9}-C\textsubscript{15} 2-methyl-1-alkenes to investigate the effects on SOA formation of adding a methyl group to the C=C double bond of the parent alkene. Such a structure is frequently observed in biogenic compounds, such as isoprene and \(\alpha\)-pinene. Branching ratios for reaction pathways were calculated using the measured yields of \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates presented in Chapter 4 and also measured yields of 2-ketones, and
vapor pressures were estimated using measurements of gas-particle partitioning of hydroxynitrates and data from previous studies. The model results were compared with measured SOA yields, providing additional information about the reaction mechanism that can be used to improve the model.

5.3 Experimental Section

Chemicals. The following chemicals, with purities (when available) and suppliers, were used: 2-methyl-1-nonene (97%), 2-methyl-1-undecene (97%), 2-octanone (98%), 2-nonanone (99+%), and 1-pentadecene (98%) [Sigma-Aldrich], 2-methyl-1-octene (97%), 2-methyl-1-tridecene (99%), and 2-methyl-1-tetradecene (97%) [ChemSampCo], 2-methyl-1-decene (97%) and 2-methyl-1-dodecene (≥97%) [Rieke Metals], dioctyl sebacate (≥97%) [Fluka], and NO [Matheson Tri Gas]. All chemicals were used without further purification. Methyl nitrite was synthesized (Taylor et al., 1980) and O₃ was generated using a Welsbach T-408 O₃ generator.

Environmental Chamber Method. The OH radical-initiated reactions of C₉-C₁₅ 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NOₓ were conducted in a 5900 L PTFE environmental chamber that is equipped with blacklights covering two walls. The
chamber was filled with clean, dry air (<5 ppbv hydrocarbons, <1% RH, <50 ppbv NOx, <10 ppbv O₃) from an Aadco clean air system and experiments were performed at room temperature (~25 °C) and atmospheric pressure. 2-methyl-1-alkenes, methyl nitrite, and NO were added to the chamber by flushing measured amounts from a glass bulb using clean air or N₂, and dioctyl sebacate (DOS) seed particles were generated by evaporation-condensation and flushed into the chamber using N₂. The NO was added to suppress the formation of O₃ and NO₃ radicals. A Teflon-coated fan was run for ~1 min to mix the chamber contents. Initial concentrations of 2-methyl-1-alkenes, methyl nitrite, NO, and DOS seed particles were approximately 1, 5, and 5 ppmv and 200 µg m⁻³. Reactions of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene were also performed in the presence of 20 ppmv of NH₃ added in the same way as the other gases.

The reaction was initiated by turning on the blacklights to generate OH radicals by methyl nitrite photolysis (Atkinson et al., 1981). After 6 min the blacklights were turned off, immediately terminating OH radical formation. In a typical experiment, SOA formation was observed within 1 min of turning on the blacklights, 40-50% of the alkene reacted, and the average OH radical concentration was ~3 x 10⁷ cm⁻³, estimated from the amount of alkene reacted and OH radical rate constant (Nishino et al., 2009).
Concentrations of O₃, NO, and NOₓ were measured using a Dasibi model 1003-AH O₃ monitor and a Thermo Environmental Instruments Inc. 42C NO-NO₂-NOₓ analyzer.

**Particle Mass Spectrometric Analysis.** A thermal desorption particle beam mass spectrometer (TDPBMS) was used to analyze particle composition in real-time (Tobias et al., 2000) and by temperature-programmed thermal desorption (TPTD) (Tobias and Ziemann, 1999). Particles are sampled from the chamber into the TDPBMS using an aerodynamic lens (Liu et al., 1995a; Liu et al., 1995b) and the resulting particle beam impacts in a V-shaped notch at the tip of a copper vaporizer rod coated with nonstick polymer (Chattopadhyay and Ziemann, 2005). For real-time analysis the vaporizer temperature was 160°C, hot enough for near-instantaneous particle evaporation. For TPTD analysis the vaporizer was cooled to -40°C, particles were collected for 30 min, and the vaporizer was allowed to warm to 5°C before being heated to 200°C with a computer controlled linear temperature ramp of 2°C min⁻¹. In this case components were separated according to volatility. Evaporated compounds diffuse into an ABB Extrel MEXM 500 quadrupole mass spectrometer where they are ionized by 70 eV electrons and the ions are mass analyzed. The mass spectrometer was scanned from \( m/z \) 40-500 (\( m/z \) 10-500 for the NH₃ experiment) in 30 sec.
**SOA Yield Measurements.** SOA yields [SOA formed (µg m⁻³)/alkene reacted (µg m⁻³)] were calculated using aerosol volume concentrations measured with a scanning mobility particle sizer (SMPS), measured SOA density, and the mass of reacted alkene measured by gas chromatography with flame ionization detection (GC-FID). Particle size distributions were measured every 2 min during a reaction using an SMPS (Wang and Flagan, 1990) that consists of a ²¹⁰Po bipolar charger, a long differential mobility analyzer similar design to the TSI model 3934, a TSI Model 3010 Condensation Particle Counter, and a scanning/inversion program developed by the McMurry group at the University of Minnesota for use with Labview software. Particles were assumed to have a density of 1.1 g cm⁻³, the density of a dried filter extract of SOA formed from the reaction of 2-methyl-1-tridecene in the absence of seed aerosol. The density was measured using a microliter syringe and a balance. Alkene concentrations were measured before and after reaction by collecting 100 cm⁻³ air samples on TenaxTA solid adsorbent, desorbing at 250°C in the GC inlet, and analyzing by GC-FID (Docherty et al., 2005). The GC-FID signals of the 2-methyl-1-alkenes prior to reaction were all within ± 5% of those expected for initial chamber concentrations of 1 ppmv, as determined from calibration curves created by analyzing solutions of the authentic compounds. This result and the
observation that GC-FID signals were within ± 5% for replicate samples taken at 30 min intervals both before and after reaction indicated that no wall loss corrections were necessary.

**Ketone Yield Measurements.** Concentrations of 2-octanone and 2-nonanone formed from the reactions of 2-methyl-1-octene and 2-methyl-1-nonene were measured by collecting 500 cm$^{-3}$ air samples on TenaxTA solid adsorbent and analyzing by GC-FID. Ketones were identified by retention times and concentrations were calculated using GC-FID calibration curves created by analyzing solutions of the authentic compounds. These values were then used to calculate molar yields (moles ketone formed/moles alkene reacted).

### 5.4 Development of a Chemical Mechanism and Model of SOA Formation

**Reaction Mechanism.** Figure 5.1 shows the mechanism of OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$, where R represents an alkyl group. The mechanism was developed based on previous gas (Atkinson and Arey, 2003a) and SOA (Matsunaga et al., 2009) studies. The reaction is initiated either by addition of an OH radical to the C=C double bond or by abstraction of an H atom from the carbon
Figure 5.1 Mechanism of the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$. 
chain, forming a $\beta$-hydroxyalkyl radical or alkyl radical, respectively. For the most part, the subsequent reactions of these two radicals are similar, with products formed from $\beta$-hydroxyalkyl radicals having an additional hydroxy group. Both pathways can contribute to SOA formation. In this section we discuss in detail the OH radical addition pathways and products. The reader is referred to studies of OH radical-initiated reactions of alkanes (Atkinson and Arey, 2003b; Lim and Ziemann, 2009b) for details on H-atom abstraction reactions, since alkanes react exclusively by that pathway. The major H-atom abstraction products thought to contribute to SOA formation from reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes are discussed in a section below.

Addition of an OH radical to the C=C double bond occurs at either carbon atom, forming a pair of $\beta$-hydroxyalkyl radical isomers that then react with O$_2$ to form $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals. $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals react with NO to form $\beta$-hydroxynitrates [P1, P2] or $\beta$-hydroxyalkoxy radicals. $\beta$-hydroxyalkoxy radicals react with O$_2$ to form $\alpha$-hydroxycarbonyls [P4], decompose and react with O$_2$ to form formaldehyde [P5] and a ketone [P6], or isomerize and react with O$_2$ to form dihydroxyperoxy radicals. In reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes, no $\alpha$-hydroxyketone [P3] is formed because of the absence of an H atom on the $\alpha$-carbon of a tertiary $\beta$-
hydroxyalkoxy radical. Dihydroxyperoxy radicals react with NO to form dihydroxynitrates or dihydroxyalkoxy radicals, with the latter then reacting by one of two possible 1, 5 H-atom shift isomerization pathways. The predominant pathway is H-atom abstraction from the carbon atom on which the OH group is located (Atkinson, 2007), but when no such H atom is present one is instead abstracted from a CH₂ group further along the carbon chain. The resulting products (following reaction with O₂) are dihydroxyaldehydes [P10] and trihydroxyperoxy radicals, with no P9 isomer formed corresponding to P10. The trihydroxyperoxy radicals react with NO to form trihydroxynitrates [P11, P12] or trihydroxyalkoxy radicals, and the latter then isomerize and react with O₂ to form trihydroxyketones [P13, P14]. Dihydroxyaldehydes [P10] and trihydroxyketones [P13, P14] present in particles or on chamber walls can isomerize to cyclic hemiacetals [P19, P15, P16, and isomers], which can then dehydrate to form dihydrofurans [P20, P17, P18, and isomers] (Atkinson et al., 2008; Lim and Ziemann, 2009b). The pathways indicated by dashed arrows in Figure 5.1 are discussed later; they are less well established but their occurrence is indicated by discrepancies between SOA yield calculations and measurements.
Branching Ratios and Product Yields. In Figure 5.1, $\alpha_i$ is the branching ratio for the reaction of a specie by pathway $i$, defined as $\alpha_i = r_i / \Sigma r_i$, where $r_i$ is the reaction rate for pathway $i$ and the sum is over all pathways for the specie and equal to 1. The branching ratios for pathways originating from 1-hydroxyalkyl and 2-hydroxyalkyl radicals are labeled by odd and even numbers, respectively. The values used in the model are presented in Table 5.1, and the calculation method is explained in Appendix D. The branching ratios are consistent with the measured yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates reported in Chapter 4, ketone yields of $0.453 \pm 0.024$ measured here for 2-octanone and 2-nonanone formed from the reactions of 2-methyl-1-octene and 2-methyl-1-nonene, the rate constants for OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes (Kwok and Atkinson, 1995; Nishino et al., 2009), and the rate constants for $\beta$-hydroxyalkoxy radical reactions (Atkinson, 2007).

Molar yields of the products normalized for OH radical addition to the C=C double bond [(moles of product formed/moles of alkene reacted)/$\alpha_{C=C}$] and for H-atom abstraction [(moles of product formed/moles of alkene reacted)/(1 – $\alpha_{C=C}$)] are given in Table 5.2. These molar yields are equal to the product of the branching ratios along the pathway by which each compound is formed.
Table 5.1 Branching Ratios used to Model SOA Formation from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NOx.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Branching Ratio</th>
<th>( \alpha_{C=C} )</th>
<th>( \alpha_{C=C} )</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha_1 )</td>
<td>0.81 x ( \alpha_{C=C} )</td>
<td>0.19 x ( \alpha_{C=C} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha_2 )</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>0.12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha_3 )</td>
<td>0.75</td>
<td>0.88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha_4 )</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>0.62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha_5 )</td>
<td>0.46</td>
<td>0.38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha_6 )</td>
<td>0.54</td>
<td>0.54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha_7, \alpha_8 )</td>
<td>0.17</td>
<td>0.83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha_9 )</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha_{10} )</td>
<td>0.76</td>
<td>1.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha_{11} )</td>
<td>0.24</td>
<td>0.24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha_{12} )</td>
<td>0.20</td>
<td>0.20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha_{13}, \alpha_{14} )</td>
<td>0.80</td>
<td>0.80</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\( ^a \) Values of \( \alpha_{C=C} \) were calculated as described in Appendix D.
Table 5.2 Normalized Molar Yields of Products used to Model SOA Formation from OH Radical Addition and H-atom Abstraction Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NO$_x$.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Product</th>
<th>Normalized molar yield$^a$</th>
<th>Product</th>
<th>Normalized molar yield$^a$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>OH radical addition</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\beta$-hydroxynitrates</td>
<td></td>
<td>dihydroxycarbonyls</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P1</td>
<td>0.203 [0.202]$^b$</td>
<td>P9</td>
<td>0.000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P2</td>
<td>0.023 [0.023]$^b$</td>
<td>P10</td>
<td>0.057</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P1 + P2</td>
<td>0.226 [0.225]$^b$</td>
<td>P9 + P10</td>
<td>0.057</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\beta$-hydroxycarbonyls</td>
<td></td>
<td>trihydroxynitrates</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P3</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>P11</td>
<td>0.038</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P4</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>P12</td>
<td>0.004</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>carbonyls</td>
<td></td>
<td>P11+P12</td>
<td>0.042 [0.042]$^b$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P5</td>
<td>0.454</td>
<td>trihydroxycarbonyls</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P6</td>
<td>0.454 [0.453]$^c$</td>
<td>P13</td>
<td>0.153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dihydroxynitrates</td>
<td></td>
<td>P14</td>
<td>0.014</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P7</td>
<td>0.039</td>
<td>P13+P14</td>
<td>0.167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P8</td>
<td>0.015</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P7 + P8</td>
<td>0.054 [0.055]$^b$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>H-atom abstraction</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,4-hydroxynitrates</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$Normalized molar yields were calculated as (moles of product/moles of alkene reacted)/$\alpha_{C=C}$ for OH radical addition and as (moles of product/moles of alkene reacted)/(1 – $\alpha_{C=C}$) for H-atom abstraction. Values of $\alpha_{C=C}$ were calculated as described in Appendix D.

$^b$From Chapter 4.

$^c$From this study.
**H-atom Abstraction and Secondary Reactions.** First-generation products formed through H-atom abstraction pathways and second-generation products formed by reactions of OH radicals with all first-generation products are also potential sources of SOA. Because, however, only ~10-20% of the reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes with OH radicals occurs by H-atom abstraction and the reaction mechanisms are complex (Lim and Ziemann, 2009b), these products were not included explicitly in the mechanism shown in Figure 5.1 or in the SOA model. Instead, they were incorporated using a simplified approach that attempts to estimate upper limits to the possible contributions of these products to SOA mass (Matsunaga et al., 2009). The major first-generation products of H-atom abstraction reactions are expected to be the same as those formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of \( n \)-alkanes: alkyl nitrates, 1,4-hydroxycarboxyls, and 1,4-hydroxynitrates, but with a C=C double bond. Alkyl nitrates and 1,4-hydroxycarboxyls are more volatile than 1,4-hydroxynitrates, so in TPTD analysis they will desorb at lower temperatures than 1,4-hydroxynitrates. In thermal desorption profiles shown in Chapter 4, there is no evidence of alkyl nitrates or 1,4-hydroxycarboxyls in particles, probably because alkyl nitrates are too volatile and 1,4-hydroxycarboxyls isomerize to cyclic hemiacetals that can dehydrate to form dihydrofurans that then evaporate (Matsunaga et
al., 2009; Lim and Ziemann, 2009b). These cyclization-dehydration reactions can lead to sharply increasing and then decreasing signals in time profiles of ions that are characteristic of cyclic hemiacetals (Lim and Ziemann, 2009b). This was not observed here, indicating that cyclic hemiacetals formed through H-atom abstraction pathways do not contribute significantly to SOA formation. Nonetheless, in the future we intend to incorporate these heterogenous reactions into the mechanism explicitly by using an approach developed recently for reactions of alkanes (Lim and Ziemann, 2009c). Here, it was assumed that 1,4-hydroxynitrates were the only first-generation H-atom abstraction product that contributed to SOA formation and that their H-atom abstraction-normalized yield was 0.1 (Lim and Ziemann, 2005; Reisen et al., 2005). The contribution of secondary reactions to SOA formation was estimated using a kinetic model written in FACSIMILE (Matsunaga et al., 2009). The rate constants for OH radical addition and H-atom abstraction for alkenes and first-generation products were calculated using equations from Nishino et al. (2009) and Kwok and Atkinson (1995). The yields of products formed by OH radical addition followed by H-atom abstraction were calculated by assuming that all first-generation OH radical addition products (saturated $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, trihydroxynitrates, dihydroxycarbonyls, and
trihydroxycarbonyls) other than carbonyls were in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium.

For simplicity, it was assumed that these compounds have the same vapor pressures as $\beta$-hydroxynitrates. Since $\beta$-hydroxynitrates have the highest vapor pressures among the products listed above, values calculated using this assumption should overestimate the contributions from this pathway to SOA formation. The carbonyls [P5, P6] were excluded because they generally react with OH radicals to form even smaller carbonyls (Atkinson and Arey, 2003a). The yields of products from H-atom abstraction followed by OH radical addition were calculated by assuming that all first-generation H-atom abstraction products (unsaturated alkyl nitrates, 1,4-hydroxycarbonyls, and 1,4-hydroxynitrates) were in the gas phase and so available for OH radical addition reactions. Since 1,4-hydroxynitrates undergo gas-particle partitioning, these calculations should overestimate the contributions of these pathways to SOA formation.

**Gas-Particle Partitioning and SOA Yield Calculations.** Gas-particle partitioning of each product was calculated using the theory introduced by Pankow (1994). The theory assumes that particulate organic matter is a single, liquid organic phase, and should be a valid here because dried SOA filter extracts were clear liquids. An equilibrium partitioning coefficient was calculated for each compound from the mean
molecular weight of particulate organic matter, the activity coefficient of the compound in the organic phase, and the liquid-phase vapor pressure of the compound. The mean molecular weight of particulate organic material was assumed to be that of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, activity coefficients were assumed to be unity (Seinfeld et al., 2001), and vapor pressures were estimated using the equations shown in Table 5.3, which were obtained using the approaches described below.

To estimate vapor pressures of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates, the fractions of each compound in the particle phase [moles in particle phase/(moles in particle phase + gas phase)] were calculated as a function of carbon number as the ratio of the measured yield to the yield in the plateau region, where the compounds are expected to be entirely in the particle phase. The results are presented in Figure 5.2. The measured yields used in the calculations were presented in Chapter 4, with the exception of the $C_9$ trihydroxynitrate yield. This value could not be measured because the HPLC peak overlapped with the solvent peak, and so was estimated here from the aerosol yield for the reaction assuming that products other than trihydroxynitrates were formed in negligible amounts or were too volatile to partition into
Table 5.3 Parameters used to Calculate Compound Vapor Pressures from the Equation

$$\log P (\text{Pa}) = A - (0.4537 \times C_n).$$

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compounds</th>
<th>A</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1-hydroxy-2-nitrooxyalkanes</td>
<td>3.979</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-nitrooxy-2-hydroxyalkanes</td>
<td>4.511</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dihydroxynitrates</td>
<td>2.979</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trihydroxynitrates</td>
<td>1.979</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dihydroxycarbonyls</td>
<td>4.034</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trihydroxycarbonyls</td>
<td>3.034</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,4-hydroxynitrates</td>
<td>4.698</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Figure 5.2 Fractions of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates [1-hydroxy-2-nitrooxyalkanes ($1H2NC_n$) and 2-nitrooxy-1-hydroxyalkanes ($1N2HC_n$)], dihydroxynitrates (DHN), and trihydroxynitrates (THN) formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$, measured in the particle phase. The dashed curves were calculated using gas-particle partitioning theory with compound vapor pressures adjusted to achieve good visual fits to the data.
the particles. The dashed curves in Figure 5.2 are fits of the data to gas-particle partitioning theory (Pankow, 1994). For these calculations, the mean molecular weights of particulate organic compounds were assumed to be the same as those of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, activity coefficients were assumed to be unity (Seinfeld et al., 2001), organic aerosol mass concentrations were measured, and vapor pressures were adjusted to achieve visually good fits to the data. The vapor pressures were assumed to obey an equation of the form $\log P (\text{Pa}) = A - (0.4537 \times C_n)$, where the value of 0.4537 (equivalent to a decrease in vapor pressure of a factor of 2.85 per carbon number) was calculated using a linear least-squares fit to vapor pressures measured for 1,2-dialkyl nitrates using gas chromatography (Fisher and Ballschmiter, 1998). Fitting data for a class of hydroxynitrates therefore involved adjusting the value of $A$. Vapor pressures for non-nitrates, for which yields were not measured, were estimated by group contribution methods. The vapor pressure equations are given in Table 5.3. They are similar to those presented previously for the products formed from reactions of 1-alkenes (Matsunaga et al., 2009). The vapor pressures of the two $\beta$-hydroxynitrate isomers differ by about a factor of 3, and the vapor pressures of dihydroxynitrates and trihydroxynitrates are about 10 and 100 times lower than those of the less volatile $\beta$-hydroxynitrate isomers (1-
hydroxy-2-nitroxyalkanes) due to the addition of one and two hydroxy groups, respectively. The vapor pressures of 1,4-hydroxynitrates formed through H-atom abstraction pathways were assumed to be the same as those of the more volatile \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrate isomers (1-nitroxy-2-hydroxyalkanes), because vapor pressures are higher when functional groups are located away from the ends of a molecule. Vapor pressures of dihydroxycarbonyls and trihydroxycarbonyls were calculated by assuming that the vapor pressures of \( \beta \)-diols are the same as those of the more volatile \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrate isomers and then reducing the vapor pressure by a factor of 3 due to the addition of a carbonyl group, and an additional factor of 10 due to the addition of a hydroxy group. The estimated vapor pressures are somewhat higher than those estimated using group contribution methods (Pankow and Asher, 2008). The estimated vapor pressures are, for the most part, also consistent with the observed trends in desorption temperatures discussed below: dihydroxycarbonyls < \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates ~ 1,4-hydroxynitrates < trihydroxycarbonyls ~ dihydroxynitrates < trihydroxynitrates. The major discrepancy is dihydroxycarbonyls, which are expected to desorb at about the same temperature as \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates. One should remember that interactions among
molecules in particles can affect vapor pressures in ways that are difficult to predict and are not accounted for in these calculations.

To calculate SOA yields, the total (gas + particle) mass concentration of each product was calculated by multiplying the normalized molar yield by either $\alpha_{C=C}$ or $1 - \alpha_{C=C}$ (for OH radical addition and H-atom abstraction products, respectively), and then multiplying this value by moles of alkene reacted x molecular weight of product.

The fraction of each product in the particle phase was calculated by multiplying the equilibrium partitioning coefficient by the concentration of organic particulate matter, equal here to the sum of the mass concentrations of DOS seed particles and SOA. These fractions were then multiplied by the total mass concentration of each product to obtain the mass concentration of each product in the particle phase, which were then summed and divided by the mass of reacted alkene to obtain the SOA yield. The calculations were carried out iteratively using the procedure of Colville and Griffin (2004).

5.5 Results and Discussion

**SOA Product Identification.** The real-time mass spectrum of SOA formed from the reaction of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene is shown in Figure 5.3A, and thermal desorption
Figure 5.3 Mass spectral analyses of SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene or 1-pentadecene in the presence of NO$_x$. (A) Real-time TDPBMS mass spectra, (B) total ion ($m/z$ 50-500) thermal desorption profiles, and (C) real-time TDPBMS signals of characteristic ion of dihydrofurans ($m/z$ 223) after adding O$_3$ to the chamber containing SOA. Thermal desorption profiles were smoothed and normalized to peak values, and signals in (C) were normalized to values at 0 min.
profiles of total ion signal of SOA formed from reactions of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene and 1-pentadecene are shown in Figure 5.3B. The total ion signal is proportional to organic mass (Crable and Coggeshall, 1958), and since compounds with lower vapor pressures desorb at higher temperatures, the profiles in Figure 5.3B represent distributions of SOA mass with respect to volatility. Three peaks or shoulders are present in both profiles at approximately 50-60°C, 75°C, and 100°C, with the first two corresponding to β-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates. In Figure 5.3A, the peak at m/z 213, and those at m/z 211 and 193, are characteristic of these two compounds. The β-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates formed from the reaction of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene have been identified from mass spectra after HPLC separation, desorption profiles of characteristic ions, fragmentation pathways, and 1H NMR analyses as described in Chapter 4. The profile shown for the reaction of 1-pentadecene is the same that discussed previously for the reaction of 1-tetradecene (Matsunaga et al., 2009; Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009), except that the desorption temperatures of the products are shifted to the right due to lower volatility of the products. The first two peaks are from β-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates with structures similar to P1, P2 and P7, P8, respectively.
The peaks at 100°C in Figure 5.3B are from products less volatile than dihydroxynitrates. For the 1-pentadecene reaction, this peak is assigned to cyclic hemiacetals (similar structure to P19) and dihydrofurans (similar structure to P20) formed primarily from dihydroxyketones, and dimers formed primarily from dihydroxyaldehydes (similar structure to P10), as discussed previously (Matsunaga et al., 2009). For the 2-methyl-1-tetradecene reaction, the peak at 100°C also has contributions from cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans. Ions present at $m/z$ 241 and 223 in Figure 5.3A are characteristic of a cyclic hemiacetal [P19] and dihydrofurans [P20 and isomer] formed from the dihydroxyaldehyde [P10], and $m/z$ 225 and 239 are characteristic of cyclic hemiacetals [P15, P16, and isomers] and dihydrofurans [P17, P18, and isomers] formed from trihydroxyketones [P13, P14]. The $m/z$ 241, 223, and 239 ions are formed by loss of OH from the molecular ion (Matsunaga et al., 2009; Gong et al., 2005; Lim and Ziemann, 2005), whereas the $m/z$ 225 ion is formed by scission of the C-C bond between the two functional groups (Matsunaga et al., 2009). The assignment of dihydrofurans to $m/z$ 223 is supported by the results shown in Figure 5.3C. In this experiment, 20 ppmv of O$_3$ was added to the chamber 4 h after the lights were turned off. The intensity of the $m/z$ 223 peak dropped immediately after O$_3$ addition due to reaction of O$_3$ with the dihydrofuran
C=C double bond. The increase in signal after the sharp drop is due to SOA formation from the reaction of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene with NO₃ radicals (Gong et al., 2005) formed from reaction of O₃ with NO₂. The intensity of the m/z 239 peak also decreased after O₃ was added, but it was not as obvious because of the low initial intensity and the large signal from SOA products formed from the reaction of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene with NO₃.

The assignments for m/z 223 and 225 are also consistent with the single ion desorption profiles shown in Figure 5.4A, which both exhibit peaks at ~100°C. In reactions of 1-alkenes, it appears that cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans are formed primarily from dihydroxyketones, and dimers are formed primarily from dihydroxyaldehydes (Matsunaga et al., 2009; Holt et al., 2005; Kern and Spiteller, 1996). Although dihydroxyaldehydes [P10] are formed from the reaction of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene, there is no indication of dimer formation. This could be due to a low yield of dihydroxyaldehyde, predicted to be 0.044 (Table 5.2) compared to 0.157 for those formed from reactions of 1-alkenes (Matsunaga et al., 2009). It could also be due to a smaller driving force for the formation of dimers, which are hemiacetals that may or may not undergo further cyclization reactions. The reactivity of the carbonyl group involved in hemiacetal formation can be altered by α- and β-substituents through their effect on the
the zwitterionic resonance structure of the carbonyl group (Bruckner, 2002). Electron-donating substituents such as alkyl groups stabilize the structure, reducing reactivity, while electron-withdrawing substituents such as hydroxy groups have the opposite effect. As a result, aldehydes are more reactive than ketones and β-hydroxyaldehydes are more reactive than aldehydes. The dihydroxyaldehydes formed from reactions of 1-alkenes and 2-methyl-1-alkenes are both β-hydroxyaldehydes, but the latter have a methyl group instead of an H atom at the β position and so are expected to have less tendency to form hemiacetals.

The desorption profiles of m/z 223 and m/z 225 exhibit multiple peaks, indicating the presence of more than one compound. In addition to coming from dihydrofurans, m/z 223 ions are also expected from 1,4-hydroxynitrates, formed by loss of H₂O and NO₂ from the molecular ion (Lim and Ziemann, 2009b). The peak at 57°C is most likely from 1,4-hydroxynitrates, since β-hydroxytritirates also desorb at 57°C, as described in Chapter 4, and the vapor pressures of the two compounds are expected to be similar. In addition to coming from cyclic hemiacetals, m/z 225 ions are also expected from the dihydroxycarbonyl [P10] and trihydroxycarbonyls [P13, P14]. The m/z 225 ion is formed from the dihydroxycarbonyl by losing CH₃ and H₂O from the molecular ion.
(McLafferty and Tureček, 1993), and from trihydroxycarbonyls by scission of the C-C bond between the two functional groups (Matsunaga et al., 2009). Based on relative vapor pressures, the peaks at 33°C and 63-78°C are expected to be from the dihydroxycarbonyl and trihydroxycarbonyls. The dihydroxycarbonyl assignment is supported by the results shown in Figure 5.4B for the reaction of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene in the presence of 20 ppmv of NH$_3$. Since the formation of 1,4-hydroxynitrates is not affected by NH$_3$ (Lim and Ziemann, 2009b), the intensity of the 1,4-hydroxynitrate m/z 223 peak at 53°C in Figure 5.4B was scaled to match the intensity of the peak at 57°C in Figure 5.4A, and then all other signals in Figure 5.4B were multiplied by the same scaling factor. This allowed comparison of relative intensities in the two profiles. The intensity of the peak at 31°C in the m/z 225 profile in Figure 5.4B is much higher than the corresponding peak at 33°C in Figure 5.4B, which is expected for the dihydroxycarbonyl since NH$_3$ neutralizes HNO$_3$ (formed from by OH + NO$_2$ reaction) that catalyzes its particle-phase isomerization to a cyclic hemiacetal (Lim and Ziemann, 2009b). The lower intensities of the peaks at 98-113 °C in the m/z 223 and 225 profiles in Figure 5.4B, compared to the corresponding peaks at 104-112°C in Figure 5.4A, is also consistent with the assignment of these peaks to cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans, since the
Figure 5.4 Thermal desorption profiles of ions characteristic of dihydrofurans and 1,4-hydroxynitrates ($m/z$ 223) and dihydroxycarbonyl, trihydroxycarbonyls, and cyclic hemiacetals ($m/z$ 225) formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-tetradecene in the presence of NO$_x$ (A) without and (B) with NH$_3$ in the chamber. In (A), thermal desorption profiles were smoothed and normalized to the peak value. In (B), profiles were scaled by a single factor so that $m/z$ 223 signal for 1,4-hydroxynitrates at 53°C peak in (B) and 57°C peak in (A) were equal.
formation of these compounds should be much slower (possibly negligible) in the presence of NH₃. Based on these results, it appears that the dihydroxycarbonyl, trihydroxycarbonyls, cyclic hemiacetals, and dihydrofurans co-exist in equilibrium in SOA formed from the 2-methyl-1-tetradecene reaction, consistent with the conclusion that the formation of cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans from dihydroxycarbonyl is reversible (Matsunaga et al., 2009).

The thermal desorption profiles also provide information that can be used to better constrain the reaction mechanism and SOA model. Although the dihydroxycarbonyl is apparently responsible for the peak in the m/z 225 profile at 33°C in Figure 5.4A, the absence of a peak or shoulder at 33°C in the total ion profile in Figure 5.3B indicates that this compound contributes very little SOA mass. One possibility is that the dihydroxycarbonyls exist primarily in the form of cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans, which contribute to the total ion peak at 100°C. From the area under the curve, this peak is responsible for ~25% of the SOA yield of 0.465, equal to 0.116. Subtracting the contribution of 0.049 from trihydroxynitrates, which have been quantified and desorb at the same location, the contribution of cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans to the SOA yield is estimated to be 0.067. This is close to the dihydroxycarbonyl yield of
0.057 predicted by the model. This result indicates that dihydroxycarbonyls exist in SOA primarily in the form of cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans, which are essentially non-volatile, whereas trihydroxycarbonyls are primarily in their linear form and can partition between the gas and particle phases. This information is used in some of the model calculations presented below.

**SOA Composition and Yields: Model Results and Measurements.** The product SOA yields (molar yield x product molecular weight/alkene molecular weight) calculated without contributions from secondary reactions are shown in Figure 5.5 and Appendix Tables D.1 and D.2. The yields shown in Figure 5.5A were calculated assuming that all products were in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium (gpp model), and those shown in Figure 5.5B were calculated in the same way except that dihydroxycarbonyls were assumed to be in the form of non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans present entirely in the particle phase (nv model). As shown in Figure 5.5, the model results are similar at high carbon numbers; this is because dihydroxycarbonyls were entirely in the particle phase regardless of their chemical form. For the C_{15} reaction, the yields calculated with the nv model (values are essentially the same for the two models) are: \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates (0.235), dihydroxynitrates (0.064),
Figure 5.5 Calculated product SOA yields (mass of product in SOA/mass of alkene reacted) formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x}. Products are trihydroxycarbonyls (THC), dihydroxycarbonyls (DHC), \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates (HN), dihydroxynitrates (DHN), and trihydroxynitrates (THN) formed by OH radical addition pathways, and 1,4-hydroxynitrates formed by the H-atom abstraction (HAA) pathway. Models assumptions: (A) all products were in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium and no secondary reaction products were formed; (B) same as (A) but dihydroxycarbonyls were in the form of non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans and so present entirely in the particle phase.
trihydroxynitrates (0.052), dihydroxycarbonyls (0.057), trihydroxycarbonyls (0.177), 1,4-
hydroxynitrates (0.019), and SOA (0.604). The measured yields of $C_{15}\beta$-hydroxynitrates,
dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates, compounds that were all in the particle
phase, are 0.251, 0.064, and 0.049, in good agreement with the model values (as they
should be since these yields were used to develop the models). The model predictions
diverge as the carbon number decreases, such that at $C_9$ the gpp and nv models predict
SOA yields of 0.037 and 0.130.

The SOA yields calculated as described above are compared with measured
values in Figures 5.6A and 5.6B. The gpp and nv models both over-predict SOA yields,
although at low carbon numbers the gpp model results agree reasonably well with
measured values. At $C_{15}$, where differences in model results due to different treatments of
dihydroxycarbonyl gas-particle partitioning are negligible, the SOA yields calculated
with the gpp and nv models are 0.597 and 0.604, ~30% higher than the measured SOA
yield of 0.465. This discrepancy must be due to the model treatment of reaction products
other than $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, trihydroxynitrates, and 2-ketones, since
the model predictions for these compounds agree with measured yields. Furthermore,
since the model over-predicts SOA yields, the mechanism must under-predict the
Figure 5.6 Calculated and measured yields of SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x}. Models assumptions: (A) all products were in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium and no secondary reaction products were formed; (B) same as (A) but dihydroxycarbonyls were in the form of non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans and so present entirely in the particle phase; (C) same as (B) but the yield of trihydroxycarbonyls was reduced from 0.191 to 0.038 to achieve agreement between calculated and measured C\textsubscript{15} yields.
formation of volatile decomposition products that do not form SOA. In the current mechanism the only decomposition products are 2-ketones, and their yields are well constrained by measurements with an uncertainty of ± 0.024. The discrepancy therefore appears to lie in over-predictions of the yields of dihydroxycarbonyls and trihydroxycarbonyls (the only other products), because of missing decomposition pathways. The yields of C15 1,4-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxycarbonyls, and trihydroxycarbonyls predicted by the models are 0.019, 0.057 and 0.177, for a total of 0.253 out of a predicted SOA yield 0.604. This is more than twice the value of 0.101 expected from the difference in the measured SOA yield of 0.465 and the sum of the measured yields of β-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates of 0.364.

In order to account for the discrepancy, it is therefore necessary to add a new alkoxy radical decomposition pathway to the mechanism that reduces the total yield of 1,4-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxycarbonyls, and trihydroxycarbonyls. All the alkoxy radicals shown in Figure 5.1 (including one not shown that occurs in the formation of 1,4-hydroxynitrates) are expected to isomerize rather than decompose (Atkinson, 2007), except for the β-hydroxyalkoxy radicals, for which decomposition to carboxyls [P5, P6] is already included. We therefore propose that the α-hydroxyalkyl radicals shown
Figure 5.7 Mechanism of the reaction of $\alpha$-hydroxyperoxy radicals formed in OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$. 
reacting with O$_2$ to form HO$_2$ and a dihydroxycarbonyl [P10] and trihydroxycarbonyls [P13, P14], also react as shown in Figure 5.7 to form $\alpha$-hydroxyperoxy radicals that are sufficiently stable to react with NO. The products of the NO reaction will be hydroxynitrates and $\alpha$-hydroxalkoxy radicals, with the latter (at least in part) decomposing to form volatile products that do not form SOA. This alternative pathway for the O$_2$ reaction has been shown to occur for $\alpha$-hydroxyalkyl radicals having only one hydroxy group (Orlando et al., 2000; Atkinson et al., 1995). It is possible that hydrogen bonding between the peroxy group and the two or three additional hydroxy groups present on the $\alpha$-hydroxyperoxy radicals formed here lead to additional stabilization, thereby enhancing the reaction with NO to form $\alpha$-hydroxalkoxy radicals that then decompose. Agreement between predicted and measured C$_{15}$ SOA yields would be achieved if the yield of volatile products formed from these pathways was 0.152, reducing the sum of the yields of SOA-forming 1,4-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxycarbonyls, and trihydroxycarbonyls from 0.253 to 0.101. Since mass spectra and thermal desorption profiles indicate that dihydroxycarbonyls are formed with yields similar to those predicted by the model, the simplest assumption is that all decomposition occurs via the pathway leading to trihydroxycarbonyls. This implies that ~90% of the $\alpha$-hydroxyalkyl
radicals that would otherwise react to form trihydroxycarbonyls instead react to form volatile decomposition products. Figure 5.6C and Appendix Table D.3 shows SOA yields calculated as in Figure 5.6B, but with the assumption that the yield of trihydroxycarbonyls (gas + particle) is reduced by 0.152 from 0.177 to 0.025. These yields are of course in much better agreement with measurements at high carbon numbers compared to those calculated using the other models, but at low carbon numbers the gpp model (Figure 5.6A) gives the best agreement.

Figures 5.8A and 5.8B show SOA yields calculated using the same models as in Figures 5.6A and 5.6B, but with contributions from secondary reaction products that are given in Appendix Table D.4. As expected, SOA yields are higher when secondary reaction products are included, and the agreement with measured values is worse over the entire range of carbon numbers. The average yields of C_15 1,4-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxycarbonyls, and trihydroxycarbonyls for the models are still 0.019, 0.057, and 0.177. But when the yield of 0.090 for secondary reaction products is added the total is 0.343 for products other than the quantified $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates, out of a predicted SOA yield 0.694. This is more than three times the value of 0.101 expected from the difference in the measured SOA yield of 0.465 and the
Figure 5.8 Calculated and measured yields of SOA formed from the OH radical-initiated reaction of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$. Models assumptions: (A) all products were in gas-particle partitioning equilibrium and secondary reaction products were formed; (B) same as (A) but dihydroxycarbonyls were in the form of non-volatile cyclic hemiacetals and dihydrofurans and so present entirely in the particle phase.
sum of the measured yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates of 0.364. Eliminating the discrepancy between predicted and measured SOA yields would require yields of volatile decomposition products of 0.229, reducing the yields of SOA-forming dihydroxycarbonyls and trihydroxycarbonyls from 0.234 to ~0. It is clear that this conclusion is not correct, since measurements show that dihydroxycarbonyls and trihydroxycarbonyls are present in the aerosol. Nonetheless, the yields of these compounds must be significantly lower than those predicted by the original models, indicating that additional alkoxy radical formation/decomposition pathways such as those proposed here need to be included in the reaction mechanism. Adding a more detailed mechanism for SOA formation from H-atom abstraction and secondary reactions will also be important.

5.6 Conclusions

The composition of secondary organic aerosol (SOA) formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$ differs in interesting ways from that formed from similar reactions of 1-alkenes, demonstrating the significant effects that simply adding a methyl group to the C=C double bond can have on chemistry.
As was shown in Chapter 4, this change in structure results in different branching ratios for the addition of OH radicals and the reactions of $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals with NO, and leads to the formation of trihydroxynitrates. Here, some additional differences were identified. No dihydroxycarbonyl dimers were observed in SOA, apparently because electron donation by the methyl group reduces the tendency of the $\beta$-hydroxycarbonyls to form hemiacetal dimers. And from the significant discrepancies observed between calculated and measured SOA yields it is concluded that a large fraction of $\alpha$-hydroxyalkyl radical intermediates react with O$_2$ and then NO to form the corresponding alkoxy radicals, which then decompose, resulting in significantly less SOA than would otherwise be formed. This pathway, although recognized in previous studies, is usually thought to be minor. So, even though our expectations were that modeling SOA formation from reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes would be easier than it was for 1-alkenes (where low volatility dimers and cyclic compounds formed by complex particle-phase reactions are major SOA components), these reactions offer their own challenges. Nonetheless, since most of the branching ratios for reaction pathways have been quantified, and good vapor pressure data based primarily on measurements rather than structure-activity calculations are available for estimating gas-particle partitioning, it is
expected that once additional $\alpha$-hydroxyalkyl radical reactions are incorporated into the mechanism along with more detailed representations of H-atom abstraction and secondary reactions it will be possible to achieve to a more complete model for calculating SOA composition and yield. This model may be useful not only for understanding SOA formation from reactions of these particular alkenes, but also from more complex and atmospherically abundant compounds such as terpenes.
5.7 Reference


Chapter 6

Products and Mechanism of Secondary Organic Aerosol Formation from Reactions of Linear Alkenes with NO₃ Radicals

6.1 Abstract

Secondary organic aerosol (SOA) formation from reactions of linear alkenes with NO₃ radicals was investigated in an environmental chamber using a thermal desorption particle beam mass spectrometer for particle analysis. A general chemical mechanism was developed to explain the formation of the observed SOA products. The major first-generation SOA products were hydroxynitrates, carboxynitrates, nitrooxy peroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and dihydroxy peroxynitrates. The major second-generation SOA products were hydroxy and oxo dinitrooxytetrahydrofurans, which have not been observed previously. The latter compounds were formed by a series of reactions in which δ-hydroxycarbonyls isomerize to cyclic hemiacetals, which then dehydrate to form substituted dihydrofurans (unsaturated compounds) that rapidly react with NO₃ radicals to form very low volatility products. For the ~1 ppmv alkene concentrations used here, aerosol formed only for alkenes ≥ C₇. SOA formed from C₆-C₉ alkenes consisted only of second-generation products, while for larger alkenes first-generation products
were also present and contributions increased with increasing carbon number apparently due to the formation of lower volatility products. The estimated mass fractions of first- and second-generation products were approximately 50:50, 30:70, 10:90, and 0:100, for 1-tetradecene, 1-dodecene, 1-decene, and 1-octene SOA, respectively. This study shows that δ-hydroxycarbonyls play a key role in the formation of SOA in alkene-NO3 reactions, and are likely to be important in other systems since δ-hydroxycarbonyls can also be formed from reactions of OH radicals and O3 with hydrocarbons.
6.2 Introduction

Organic particles are emitted directly into the atmosphere as products of incomplete combustion and are also formed by gas-to-particle conversion of volatile organic compounds (VOCs) emitted from anthropogenic and biogenic sources (Seinfeld and Pandis, 1998). In the latter process, VOCs are oxidized to less volatile compounds that condense to form secondary organic aerosol (SOA). The major atmospheric reactions of VOCs are those involving OH and NO$_3$ radicals and O$_3$ (Atkinson, 2000). Reactions with OH radicals occur almost exclusively during the day, reactions with NO$_3$ radicals occur primarily at night, and reactions with O$_3$ occur during the day and at night. Most studies of SOA chemistry have focused on reactions of OH radicals with aromatics (Jang and Kamens, 2001) and alkenes (Larsen et al., 2001) and on reactions of O$_3$ with alkenes (Yu et al., 1999; Tobias and Ziemann, 2000). Little is known about the chemistry of SOA formation from NO$_3$ radical reactions.

Nitrate radicals are formed in the atmosphere by the reaction of NO$_2$ with O$_3$. Concentrations are maintained at very low levels during the day by photolysis (Orlando et al., 1993) and by reaction with NO, but increase near sunset and at night such that reactions with NO$_3$ radicals can become an important sink for organic compounds.
including unsaturated hydrocarbons, phenols, aldehydes, and dimethyl sulfide (Atkinson, 1991; wayner et al., 1991). For example, recent field studies in two major urban areas have demonstrated that NO₃ radicals can contribute significantly to the oxidation of some VOCs (Geyer et al., 2001; Geyer et al., 2003). It has also been suggested that reactions of VOCs with NO₃ radicals may be important in indoor air chemistry (Nazaroff and Weschler, 2004). Although the kinetics, mechanisms, and gas-phase products of alkene-NO₃ reactions have been the subject of a relatively large number of laboratory studies (for reviews see Atkinson, 1997; Calvert et al., 2000), investigations of SOA formation are limited to a few measurements of aerosol yields (Hallquist et al., 1999; Griffin et al., 1999; Noda and Ljungström, 2002; Moldanova and Ljungström, 2000). Nonetheless, these studies show that the reactions can be efficient aerosol sources, as indicated by SOA yields approaching unity for some monoterpenes (Griffin et al., 1999).

In this study, the chemistry of SOA formation from reactions of NO₃ radicals with a suite of linear alkenes was investigated using a thermal desorption particle beam mass spectrometer (TDPBMS) for on-line aerosol analysis (Tobias et al., 2000; Tobias and Ziemann, 1999). This instrument makes it possible to identify low-volatility multifunctional organic nitrates that have not been observed previously because of the
inability of off-line methods (e.g., gas chromatography) to analyze these labile compounds. The compounds investigated included simple linear alkenes with double bonds in either terminal or internal locations. In the atmosphere, those with internal double bonds have lifetimes (calculated using rate constants from Calvert et al., 2000 and background oxidant concentrations from Atkinson and Arey, 2003) with respect to reaction with NO$_3$ radicals of ~3 hr, which is comparable to reactions with O$_3$ and OH radicals. Terminal alkenes react with NO$_3$ radicals (and O$_3$) much more slowly, so their atmospheric lifetime is determined by reaction with OH radicals. Although the emissions of linear alkenes large enough to form condensable products are probably too small to contribute significantly to atmospheric SOA formation, these compounds provide very useful models for the more abundant and complex monoterpenes. Because the present study represents the beginning of a larger investigation into the chemistry of SOA formation from alkene-NO$_3$ reactions, linear alkenes were selected in order to simplify the chemistry while still providing insight into the effects of molecular structure on the pathways that lead to aerosol products.
6.3 Experimental Section

**Materials.** The alkenes 1-hexene (99%), 1-heptene (99%), 1-octene (98%), 1-decene (94%), 1-dodecene (95%), and 1-tetradecene (92%) were obtained from Sigma-Aldrich, and 3,5,5-trimethyl-1-hexene (99%), 2-methyl-1-octene, and 7-tetradecene were obtained from ChemSampCo. All chemicals were used without further purification.

**Environmental Chamber Technique.** Reactions of alkenes with NO$_3$ radicals were performed in the dark in a ~7000 L PTFE environmental chamber at room temperature (~23°C) and pressure (~96 kPa). The chamber was flushed overnight and filled with clean, dry air (< 5 ppbv hydrocarbons, < 0.1% RH) from an Aadco pure air generator. A measured amount of alkene was evaporated from a glass bulb using gentle heating and flushed into the chamber in a clean air stream. Nitrate radicals were added in the form of N$_2$O$_5$, which thermally dissociates into NO$_3$ and NO$_2$. N$_2$O$_5$ was synthesized according to the procedure of Atkinson et al. (1984) and kept frozen in liquid N$_2$ on a glass vacuum rack until needed. When used, N$_2$O$_5$ was warmed and evaporated into an evacuated, calibrated 2.0 L bulb until an appropriate pressure was reached. The bulb was then flushed into the chamber using clean air. During these additions, a fan in the chamber was run to mix the reactants. Particles formed by homogeneous nucleation,
typically within a minute of adding N$_2$O$_5$ and increased from background concentrations of $\sim$10 cm$^{-3}$ to a peak of $\sim$10$^4$-10$^6$ cm$^{-3}$ a few minutes later. Average particle diameters were $\sim$0.2-0.4 µm.

The initial concentration of alkene in the chamber was 1 ppmv. The amount of N$_2$O$_5$ added to the bulb ($\sim$0.34 kPa) was intended to also achieve this concentration. Some N$_2$O$_5$, however, was lost to the walls of the vacuum rack, glass bulb, and chamber.

From the amount of reacted alkene measured in a few experiments, N$_2$O$_5$ losses were apparently $<$ 20%. At an initial N$_2$O$_5$ concentration of 1 ppmv, the equilibrium concentrations of NO$_3$ and NO$_2$ are 37 ppbv (calculated using an equilibrium constant of 2.9 x 10$^{-11}$ cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ (Finlayson-Pitts and Pitts, 2000)). As the alkene-NO$_3$ reaction proceeds, [NO$_3$] decreases due to reaction and to the shift in equilibrium as [N$_2$O$_5$] decreases and [NO$_2$] increases. The amount of alkene reacted at any time depends on the rate constant, which in turn depends on the structure of the molecule. For the compounds investigated here, the rate constants (Calvert et al., 2000) are approximately 1 x 10$^{-14}$ (terminal alkenes) and 3.6 x 10$^{-13}$ (2-methyl-1-octene, 7-tetradecene) cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$.

Using the appropriate second order kinetics expression and assuming no wall losses of
\( \text{N}_2\text{O}_5 \), the amounts of alkene reacted in one hour are calculated to be \(~70\%\) and \(~98\%\) for these two classes of compounds, respectively.

**Particle Mass Spectrometric Analysis.** The TDPBMS was used to analyze particle composition in real-time (Tobias et al., 2000) and by temperature-programmed thermal desorption (Tobias and Ziemann, 1999). Aerosol is sampled from the chamber through stainless steel tubing and enters the TDPBMS through a 0.1 mm critical orifice that reduces the pressure from atmosphere to \(~300\ \text{Pa}\). Particles are focused in an aerodynamic lens (Liu et al., 1995a; Liu et al., 1995b) and the resulting beam passes through a nozzle and two flat-plate skimmers before entering the detection chamber. In the detection chamber (~10\(^{-5}\) \text{Pa}\), particles impact in a V-shaped notch in the tip of a copper vaporizer rod that for real-time analysis is resistively heated to \(~165\degree\text{C}\). Particles are completely vaporized upon impact and vapor diffuses into an ABB Extrel MEXM 500 quadrupole mass spectrometer where molecules are ionized by electrons, mass-filtered, and detected using a conversion dynode/pulse counting detector. For TPTD analysis, the vaporizer rod was cooled to \(-30\degree\text{C}\) and particles were collected for \(~15\ \text{min}\). The rod was allowed to warm to \(-5\degree\text{C}\) and was then heated to \(~90-120\degree\text{C}\) using a computer controlled linear temperature ramp of 2\degree\text{C} \text{min}^{-1}. Compounds desorb from the vaporizer according to
their vapor pressures, allowing separation of components for mass spectral analysis. The mass spectrometer was typically scanned from m/z 10-400 in ~30 s. Although slightly better resolution might be obtained with a slower ramp, radiative heating by the ionizer sets a minimum heating rate of ~1-2°C min⁻¹. This effect could be reduced with active cooling during ramping, but it would then be much more difficult to produce the exceptionally linear ramp we currently achieve and also lengthen the analysis time.

**Aerosol Yield Measurements.** In a few experiments, the aerosol yield [aerosol mass formed (µg m⁻³)/VOC mass reacted (µg m⁻³)] (Odum et al., 1996) was determined from measurements of aerosol mass and reacted alkene concentrations.

The amount of alkene consumed was determined from the alkene concentrations measured before and after reaction using gas chromatography. For these measurements, 100 cm³ of air was sampled onto solid Tenax TA adsorbent and analyzed immediately using a Hewlett Packard (HP) 6890 GC system equipped with an HP-1701 fused-silica capillary column (30 m x 0.53 mm with a 1.0 µm film thickness) and a flame ionization detector (FID). The Tenax TA samples were placed in a split/splitless inlet that was run in the splitless mode. The inlet was initially at room temperature, and then ramped to 250 °C at a rate of ~23 °C min⁻¹ after inserting the tube. The FID transfer line was maintained at
280 °C. The FID response was compared with standard calibrations to determine alkene concentrations.

The aerosol mass formed in a reaction was measured using a scanning mobility particle sizer (SMPS) (Wang and Flagan, 1990). The SMPS consisted of a $^{210}$Po bipolar charger, a long differential mobility analyzer similar in design to the TSI model 3934, a TSI Model 3010 Condensation Particle Counter, and a scanning/inversion program developed by the McMurry group at the University of Minnesota for use with Labview software (Tobias et al., 2001). The SMPS was operated at aerosol and sheath air flows of approximately 0.5 and 2.5 L min$^{-1}$, respectively, which provide a resolution of ~20% in particle size measurements. The software output includes the particle size distribution, number concentration, and volume concentration, the latter of which can be converted to a particle mass concentration by multiplying by the particle density. The density was assumed to be 1 g cm$^{-3}$.

6.4 Results and Discussion

Reaction Mechanism. First-Generation Products. On the basis of previous studies of the gas-phase products of the reactions of alkenes with NO$_3$ radicals (Jay and
Stiglitz, 1989; Barnes et al., 1990; Skov et al., 1992; Wänberg, 1993; Kwork et al., 1996; Turazon et al., 1999), the reaction of NO$_3$ radicals with a linear alkene [designated here as R$_X$(CH$_2$)$_3$CH=CHR$_Y$, where R$_X$ and R$_Y$ are alkyl groups] can potentially form first-generation products 1-16 by the mechanism shown in Figure 6.1. The reaction is initiated by the addition of NO$_3$ to the carbon-carbon double bond, with H-atom abstraction being negligible. Addition occurs predominantly at the less-substituted carbon atom due to the enhanced stability imparted to the radical site by the electron-donating alkyl group. For terminal alkenes, this means NO$_3$ adds primarily at the end of the molecule. The resulting nitrooxyalkyl radical reacts solely with O$_2$ to form a nitrooxyalkylperoxy radical. This radical can react with NO$_2$ to form a nitrooxyalkyl peroxynitrate [1], which is thermally unstable and therefore acts as a temporary reservoir for the nitrooxyalkylperoxy radical. The nitrooxyalkylperoxy radical can also react with HO$_2$ to form a hydroperoxynitrate [2] or with other organic peroxy radicals (RO$_2$•) to form a hydroxynitrate [3], carbonylnitrate [4], or nitrooxyalkoxy radical. The nitrooxyalkoxy radical can decompose to aldehydes [5, 6], isomerize through a 1,5 H-atom shift to a nitrooxyhydroxyalkyl radical, react with O$_2$ to form compound 4, or react with NO$_2$ to
Figure 6.1 Proposed mechanism for forming first-generation products in reactions of linear alkenes with NO₃ radicals.
form an alkyl dinitrate [7]. The nitrooxyhydroxyalkyl radical can subsequently undergo reactions similar to the nitrooxyalkyl radical to form products 8-12.

**Isomerization of δ-Hydroxycarbonyls: a Gateway to Second-Generation Reaction Products.** The first-generation reaction products 1-12 are saturated compounds that react too slowly with NO₃ radicals for further reactions to occur. Recently, however, it has been shown that δ-hydroxycarbonyls (i.e., compounds in which CHOH and C=O groups are separated by two carbon atoms) similar to compounds 11 and 12 exist in the gas phase in equilibrium with a cyclic hemiacetal isomer, which in turn is in equilibrium with a substituted dihydrofuran formed by dehydration (Cavalli et al., 2000; Martion et al., 2002). The equilibria shift in the direction of the substituted dihydrofuran with decreasing relative humidity (RH). For 5-hydroxy-2-pentanone (the only commercially available δ-hydroxycarbonyl), the lifetime for conversion to 4,5-dihydro-2-methylfuran is ~1.1 hr at RH <<1% (Martin et al., 2002). More recent studies on δ-hydroxycarbonyls created in chamber reactions have shown that as the carbon number of the δ-hydroxycarbonyl increases the equilibria shift toward the substituted dihydrofuran, with dehydration occurring as quickly as a few minutes or less (Reisen et al., 2005; Baker et al., 2005; Holt et al., 2005).
For compounds 11 and 12, isomerization leads to cyclic hemiacetals 13 and 15, which then lose water to form substituted dihydrofurans 14 and 16, respectively. As shown below, formation of substituted dihydrofurans and their subsequent reactions with NO₃ radicals provides an important pathway to second-generation products of lower volatility and greater aerosol forming potential.

**Second-Generation Products.** It has been shown that the reaction of NO₃ radicals with 4,5-dihydro-2-methylfuran is orders of magnitude faster than with alkenes (Martin et al., 2002). The substituted dihydrofuran compounds 14 and 16 therefore react rapidly with NO₃ radicals to form second-generation products. The proposed mechanism is shown in Figure 6.2 and is essentially the same as that shown in Figure 6.1 for alkenes (no reactions of nitrooxyalkoxy radicals with NO₂ are shown for reasons explained below, and an additional decomposition reaction leads to nitrooxycarbonyl esters [21, 29]). The potential second-generation products of the reactions of compounds 14 and 16 are substituted tetrahydrofurans including nitroperoxy [17, 18, 25, 26], hydroperoxy [19, 20, 27, 28], hydroxy [22, 23, 30, 31], and oxo [24, 32] dinitroxytetrahydrofurans.

**Mass Spectral Analysis of Aerosol Products.** The major challenge in using TDPBMS mass spectra to identify reaction products is that mass spectral standards are
Figure 6.2 Proposed mechanism for forming second-generation products in reactions of linear alkenes with NO$_3$ radicals.
only available for the aldehyde products (5 and 6) formed by the mechanisms shown in Figures 1 and 2. The mass spectra of other potential products are not present in libraries nor are the compounds commercially available. The approach taken here was to use mass spectra of compounds with related structures, well-known electron ionization (EI) fragmentation pathways (McLafferty and Turecek, 1993), and TPTD profiles to determine which products of the proposed mechanisms appear to be present.

1-Tetradecene. The real-time mass spectrum obtained for the reaction of 1-tetradecene \([\text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_{11}\text{CH}=\text{CH}_2]\) with NO\(_3\) radicals is shown in Figure 6.3. Significant high-mass peaks are present at \(m/z\) 333, 288, 286, 272, 258, 227, 211, 199, and 197. The TPTD desorption profiles for these and other selected \(m/z\) values are shown in Figure 6.4. For any single compound, the profiles of all \(m/z\) values that are present in its mass spectrum will exhibit maxima at the same temperature. A maximum in a desorption profile is therefore indicative of a single compound or a group of compounds having very similar vapor pressures. Although the TPTD technique was not able to completely separate the components of this mixture in order to obtain mass spectra of single compounds, by comparing profiles of different \(m/z\) values it was possible to identify 6
Figure 6.3 Real-time mass spectrum of aerosol formed in the reaction of 1-teradecene with NO₃ radicals.
Figure 6.4 Thermal desorption profiles for selected $m/z$ values for aerosol formed in the reaction of 1-tetradecene with NO$_3$ radicals.
compounds (or groups of compounds), corresponding to maxima at 30, 39, 48, 87, 92, and 96 °C.

The compound(s) responsible for each maximum was assigned by comparing potential reaction products, measured volatilities (as indicated by desorption temperatures), and major mass spectral peaks. For 1-tetradecene, \( R_X = \text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_8 \) and \( R_Y = \text{H} \) in the reaction schemes shown in Figures 6.1 and 6.2. The proposed aerosol products are shown in Figure 6.5 along with proposed pathways for creating the characteristic ions used for compound identification. The pathways are consistent with well-established electron ionization (EI) fragmentation mechanisms (McLafferty and Turecek, 1993). All the major mass spectral peaks associated with TPTD maxima can be assigned to stable ions generated from the proposed reaction products by loss of the molecular species \( \text{H}_2\text{O} \), \( \text{NO}_2 \), \( \text{HNO}_2 \), \( \text{NO}_3 \), \( \text{HNO}_3 \), \( \text{HCHO} \), \( \text{CH}_2=\text{CH}_2 \), and \( \text{CO} \), and \( \text{OH} \) and alkyl radicals. The systematic procedure used to assign the products is described in detail below.

As a starting point, we note that compounds equivalent to 1-7 have been observed among the major gas-phase products of alkene-\( \text{NO}_3 \) reactions (Atkinson, 1997; Calvert et al., 2000; Atkinson and Arey, 2003). Whether or not these compounds are found in the
Figure 6.5 Proposed aerosol products for the reaction of 1-tetradecene with NO₃ radicals and electron ionization fragmentation pathways. In this figure, R₁₂ = CH₃(CH₂)₁₁, R₉ = CH₃(CH₂)₈, and R₆ = CH₃(CH₂)₅.
aerosol analyzed here depends on the reaction conditions and the alkene carbon number, since products must have sufficiently low vapor pressures to partition into particles.

As shown in Figures 6.1 and 6.2, because the reaction of unsaturated compounds with NO$_3$ radicals is initiated by addition of NO$_3$ to the double bond, most of the products are expected to be nitrates with the exception of a few decomposition products. In EI mass spectra of organic nitrates, such as those shown in Figure E.1 (Appendix) for alkyl nitrate standards, $m/z$ 46 is a characteristic mass fragment due to NO$_2^+$. The TPTD profile of $m/z$ 46 for aerosol formed from the 1-tetradecene reaction is shown in Figure 6.4A along with those for $m/z$ 81, 83, and 85. The latter three ions are associated with many different products, and their profiles span the entire range of temperatures over which aerosol products desorb. The overlap of the desorption profiles of these peaks (as well as all others) with $m/z$ 46 suggests that all the aerosol compounds are nitrates. Nonetheless, as we begin our analysis we will not assume this is the case. It is also important to note that many of the small mass fragments (e.g., $m/z$ 46, 76, 81, 83, 85) have desorption profiles with maxima at temperatures other than those labeled in Figure 6.4. The reason for this is that these ions are associated with multiple compounds that are not completely separated by TPTD analysis. The low-mass $m/z$ profiles therefore represent contributions
from multiple products. In most cases, they exhibit maxima approximately midway between those of the labeled compound(s). High-mass fragments are more often characteristic of a single compound or isomers, and are therefore more useful for identification.

We begin by determining whether or not any of the compounds 1-7 are present among the most volatile aerosol products, since their counterparts have been identified as gas-phase products in other alkene-NO$_3$ reactions. Beginning with the compound(s) that desorbs at 30 °C, we note that the highest m/z value that exhibits a maximum at this temperature is 199 (Figure 6.4B). This cannot be compound 5 (tridecanal) or 6 (formaldehyde), since our previous studies of 1-tetradecene ozonolysis (Tobias and Ziemann, 2000) have shown that tridecanal (the least volatile of these) is too volatile to form particles under these conditions. Furthermore, the molecular weight of tridecanal is only 198. Compound 7 is eliminated from consideration because dinitrate formation through reactions of alkoxy radicals with NO$_2$ should be negligible under the conditions of these experiments. For example, using a rate constant ratio of $4 \times 10^3$ for the reaction of alkoxy radicals with NO$_2$ relative to O$_2$ (Atkinson, 1997) and the maximum value of $[\text{NO}_2]/[\text{O}_2] = 5 \times 10^{-6}$ in our experiments indicates that less than 2% of the
nitrooxyalkoxy radicals react with NO₂. Isomerization and decomposition reactions will reduce this percentage further. Compound 2 is ruled out because in previous studies we observed that the mass spectra of hydroperoxides always contain a large peak at \( m/z \) M-33 (M is the molecular ion mass) due to the loss of HO₂ (Tobias and Ziemann, 2000; Ziemann, 2003). This should result in a maximum in the \( m/z \) 258 profile at 30 °C, which is absent (Figure 6.4D).

Among the gas-phase products that have been observed in previous studies, compounds 1, 3, and 4 remain as possibilities and our results suggest that the maxima at 30 and 39 °C are due to a combination of these three compounds. The assignment of compound 3, a hydroxynitrate, as a contributor to the 30 °C compound(s) is consistent with the maximum in the \( m/z \) 199 profile shown in Figure 6.4B. Although mass spectra are not available for any of the proposed products, EI mass spectra are available for related compounds. For example, the mass spectrum of a 1,2-dihydroxytetradecane [\( \text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_{11}\text{CH(OH)}\text{CH}_2\text{OH} \)] standard, which has a similar structure to compound 3, is shown in Figure E.1 (Appendix). The highest mass peak is a large one at \( m/z \) 199 corresponding to the \( \text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_{11}\text{CHOH}^+ \) ion formed by loss of •CH₂OH. Formation of this ion should be even more favored for compound 3 because of the greater stability of
the HCHO and NO$_2$ molecules lost during decomposition (Figure 6.5) as compared to a
•CH$_2$OH radical. As expected, $m/z$ 125 and some of the other ions in the C$_n$H$_{2n-1}^+$ series
that is prominent in the 1,2-dihydroxytetradecane mass spectrum also exhibit maxima at
30 °C.

It appears that a second compound also desorbs at 30 °C. In the $m/z$ 197 profile,
(Figure 6.4B) there is a shoulder at 30 °C and a peak at 39 °C. It is unlikely that the mass
spectrum of compound 3 would have such an intense peak (~2-3 times larger than $m/z$
199) at this mass. We therefore assign this fragment to another compound with essentially
the same volatility. The best candidate is compound 4, a carbonylnitrate. It is reasonable
that the volatility of this compound would be similar to compound 3, since they only
differ by carbonyl and hydroxyl groups. The large peak at $m/z$ 197 is expected for
compound 4, due to the stable acylium ion, CH$_3$(CH$_2$)$_{11}$CO$^+$, formed by loss of HCHO
and NO$_2$ (Figure 6.5). For comparison, the mass spectrum of a 2-oxoadipic acid
[HO(O)C(CH$_2$)$_3$C(O)C(O)OH] standard shown in Figure E.1 (Appendix) has an intense
high-mass peak at $m/z$ 115 from the acylium ion HO(O)C(CH$_2$)$_3$CO$^+$ formed by loss of
the •C(O)OH radical.
This assignment of compounds 3 and 4 is also consistent with the mass spectra of the alkyl nitrate standards (M = 147) shown in Figure E.1 (Appendix). The 1-nitrooxyhexane [CH₃(CH₂)₄CH₂ONO₂] standard has a terminal nitrooxy group, as do compounds 3 and 4. Bond scission at the nitrooxy carbon, which is the pathway proposed for compounds 3 and 4, leads to m/z 71 [CH₃(CH₂)₄⁺] or 76 [CH₂ONO₂⁺] for 1-nitrooxyhexane and m/z 57 [CH₃(CH₂)₃⁺] or 90 [CH₃CHONO₂⁺] for 2-nitrooxyhexane [CH₃(CH₂)₃CH(ONO₂)CH₃], depending on which fragment retains the charge. The m/z 85 ion observed for both standards is due to loss of NO₃. This is not a major fragmentation pathway for compounds 3 and 4, but is important for some second-generation products discussed below.

The maximum at 39 °C is most likely due to compound(s) 1 and/or 10. Compound 1 is a nitrooxy peroxynitrate and compound 10 is a dihydroxy nitrate. Both should be less volatile than 3 and 4, and can easily produce m/z 197 ions (Figure 5). It is worth noting that the similar R-CH₂ONO₂ structures of compounds 1, 3, 4, and 10 should lead to CH₂ONO₂⁺ ions in the mass spectra of all four compounds. The m/z 76 desorption profile shown in Figure 6.4B exhibits a maximum between 30 and 39 °C, indicating that all these compounds fragment by this pathway.
The compound that desorbs at 48 °C is assigned as compound 8, a nitrooxyhydroxyalkyl peroxynitrate. If this compound fragments by pathways similar to compound 1, the major ions contributing to the mass spectrum should be acylium ions corresponding to \( m/z \) 155 and 162 (Figure 6.5). The desorption profiles of both these ions exhibit maxima at 48 °C.

The next maximum observed in any desorption profile is at 87 °C, followed by maxima at 92 and 96 °C. The large temperature gap between these three maxima and those at 30, 39, and 48 °C is indicative of a significant reduction in compound vapor pressures. The much higher masses of many of the fragment ions in the mass spectra associated with the lower volatility compounds indicate they have significantly different molecular structures. In the process of analyzing these data, it became obvious that the mass spectra could not be explained on the basis of first-generation products similar to those observed in previous gas-phase studies. For example, only two first-generation products, compounds 1 (\( M = 336 \)) and 8 (\( M = 352 \)), have \( M \geq 333 \) as is necessary to produce a mass spectral peak at \( m/z \) 333. Neither of these compounds can be responsible for this peak, however, since no plausible fragmentation pathways can lead to a loss of 3 or 19 mass units. The low volatilities and high molecular weights of the products
indicated that reactions were occurring that allowed a second nitrate group to be added to
the molecule, since a large number of carbonyl and/or hydroxyl groups would be needed
to achieve a similar effect. It appeared, therefore, that new double bonds were being
formed during the reaction that allowed further addition of NO₃ radicals. This led us to
the work of Martin et al. (2002), who showed that δ-hydroxycarbonyls undergo
isomerization-dehydration reactions that lead to unsaturated dihydrofuran products. The
rapid reaction of the dihydrofurans with NO₃ radicals would quickly form much lower
volatility compounds. We therefore propose that the compounds that desorb at 87, 92, and
96 °C correspond to second-generation products consisting of hydroxy [22, 23, 30, 31]
and oxo [24, 32] dinitrooxytetrahydrofurans formed by the mechanism shown in Figure
6.2.

All the major high-mass peaks in the mass spectrum, as well as some less
prominent peaks, can be explained as stable ions formed from hydroxy and oxo
dinitrooxytetrahydrofurans by loss of the molecular species H₂O, NO₂, HNO₂, NO₃,
HNO₃, HCHO, CH₂=CH₂, and CO, and OH and alkyl radicals, as shown in Figure 6.5.
For these compounds, major fragmentation pathways leading to high-mass ions are those
involving the loss of substituents from the 2 and 5 positions on the ring (i.e., the two
carbon atoms adjacent to the O-atom). This is demonstrated in the mass spectrum of 2-hydroxytetrahydrofuran shown in Figure E.2 (Appendix), where loss of OH leads to the large peak at \( m/z \) 71. The \( m/z \) 333, 288, 274, 272, and 223 peaks from the 1-tetradecene reaction can all be explained by this mechanism. Functional groups in the 3 or 4 positions on the ring are apparently not lost directly, as indicated by the absence of a \( m/z \) 71 peak in the mass spectrum of 3-hydroxytetrahydrofuran shown in Figure E.2 (Appendix). This indicates that the peaks at \( m/z \) 333 and 288, for example, are derived from different isomers having similar volatilities (Figure 6.5). The other major fragmentation pathways are initiated by H-atom abstraction enhanced by the formation of a 6-member ring (7-member in the case of \( m/z \) 227) transition state, which is a well-established mechanism (McLafferty and Turecek, 1993). This leads to the loss of \( \text{H}_2\text{O} \) (\( m/z \) 286 and 258), \( \text{HNO}_3 \) (\( m/z \) 241 and 211), and \( \text{HNO}_2 \) (\( m/z \) 227 and 199) followed by other stable molecules such as \( \text{CH}_2=\text{CH}_2 \), \( \text{CO} \), \( \text{HCHO} \), and \( \text{NO}_2 \). As shown below, the absence of a peak corresponding to \( m/z \) 286 for the reaction products of \( \text{C}_n \leq 8 \) alkenes is consistent with this pathway. It is important to note that although mass spectra of the hydroperoxy dinitrooxytetrahydofurans 19, 20, 27, and 28 (\( M = 366 \)) would also probably have significant peaks at \( m/z \) 333 due to loss of \( \text{HO}_2 \), the other observed ions are not consistent.
Figure 6.6 Real-time mass spectrum of aerosol formed in the reaction of 7-tetradecene with NO$_3$ radicals.
with fragmentation of these compounds. The second-generation products identified here have not been observed previously.

*7-Tetradecene.* The linear alkene 7-tetradecene \([\text{CH}_3\text{(CH}_2)_5\text{CH}=\text{CH}\text{(CH}_2)_5\text{CH}_3]\) is an isomer of 1-tetradecene with the double bond in the middle of the molecule. In this case, \(R_X = \text{CH}_3\text{(CH}_2)_2\) and \(R_Y = \text{CH}_3\text{(CH}_2)_5\) in Figures 6.1 and 6.2. As shown in Figure 6.6, this change in structure has only a minor effect on the real-time mass spectrum of the aerosol products. The same high-mass peaks are present at \(m/z\) 333, 288, 286, 274, 272, 258, 227, and 211. The peaks at \(m/z\) 199 and 197 are much reduced because of the change in length of the carbon chain adjacent to the double bond, and a few important new peaks appear, at \(m/z\) 160 and 190. The desorption profiles for selected \(m/z\) values are shown in Figure 6.7, and again indicate the presence of two groups of compounds: a more volatile group (first-generation products) with maxima between 14 and 42 °C, and a less volatile group (second-generation products) with maxima between 79 and 84 °C. The fragmentation pathways proposed to be responsible for the major mass spectral peaks are shown in Figure 8, and are similar to those proposed for the 1-tetradecene reaction products.
Figure 6.7 Thermal desorption profiles for selected m/z values for aerosol formed in the reaction of 7-tetradecene with NO₃ radicals.
The two most volatile aerosol products desorb at 14 and 21 °C. As with 1-tetradecene, they are assigned to compounds 3 and 4. These compounds are more volatile than the corresponding 1-tetradecene products, and also differ slightly in volatility with respect to each other. These differences are because of the shift of the functional groups from the end of the molecule to the center. The desorption profiles of m/z 85 and 113, which are indicative of a carbonylnitrate, both have maxima at 14 °C, whereas the profiles of m/z 97 and 115, which are indicative of a hydroxynitrate, both have maxima at 21 °C. The desorption profile of m/z 160 has a broad maximum spanning the region from 14 to 21 °C indicating that this fragment comes from both compounds. The m/z 113, 115, and 160 peaks are analogous to the m/z 197, 199, and 76 peaks, respectively, observed in the 1-tetradecene reaction mass spectrum. Further fragmentation of the m/z 113 and 115 ions yield large peaks at m/z 85 and m/z 97 by loss of CO and H₂O, respectively. These pathways were not observed for the m/z 197 and 199 ions from the 1-tetradecene reaction products because of the greater stability of larger RCHOH⁺ and RCO⁺ ions. This size effect is demonstrated in the mass spectra of 5-hydroxytetradecane

\[ \text{[CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_3\text{CH(OH)(CH}_2)_8\text{CH}_3] \] and 7-hydroxytetradecane

\[ \text{[CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_5\text{CH(OH)(CH}_2)_6\text{CH}_3] \] shown in Figure E.3 (Appendix). The
CH₃(CH₂)₈CHOH⁺ m/z 157 ion from 5-hydroxytetradecane does not lose H₂O to give a peak at m/z 139, whereas for 7-hydroxytetradecane the loss of H₂O from the smaller CH₃(CH₂)₅CHOH⁺ and CH₃(CH₂)₆CHOH⁺ ions is indicated by the peaks at m/z 115 and 97 and at m/z 129 and 111, respectively.

There are also maxima at 26, 38, and 42 °C in the desorption profiles of m/z 197, 131, and 113, respectively. On the basis of volatility and probable fragmentation pathways (Figure 6.8), the maxima at 38 and 42 °C are assigned to compounds 10 and 1, respectively, but no plausible assignment could be made to the 26 °C maximum.

The compounds that exhibit desorption maxima between 79 and 84 °C are assigned to second-generation products, similar to the products of the 1-tetradecene reaction. Some of the desorption profiles are broader and less well resolved, but the oxo [32 and/or 24] and hydroxy [30, 31 and/or 22, 23] dinitroxytetrahydrofurans still desorb at slightly different temperatures. This is demonstrated in Figures 6.7C,D for some of the most intense high-mass fragments. It is worth noting that in order to form the m/z 272 and 274 ions by loss of HCHO and NO₂, an H-atom and alkyl group must exchange positions on the ring. This was unnecessary for the 1-tetradecene reaction products, and suggests a strong propensity for the formation of these ions. One other difference is that for the 7-
Figure 6.8 Proposed aerosol products for the reaction of 7-tetradecene with NO₃ radicals and electron ionization fragmentation pathways. In this figure, R₆ = CH₃(CH₂)₅, R₅ = CH₃(CH₂)₄, and R₃ = CH₃(CH₂)₂.
tetradecene reaction the m/z 286 ion is apparently formed from compound 22 rather than 30, since the alkyl group must be sufficiently large for isomerization. Lastly, one very important observation that provides strong support for the identification of hydroxyl dinitrooxytetrahydrofurans is that the m/z 160 and 190 desorption profiles both have maxima at 79 °C. These are new fragments that appear because of the different position of the double bond in 7-tetradecene. They are formed when compound 30 (and/or 31), which has a molecular weight of 350, splits into fragments with mass 160 and 190.

The proposed first- and second-generation SOA products from the reactions of 1-tetradecene and 7-tetradecene are summarized in Table E.1 (Appendix) along with desorption temperatures (T_{des}) and vapor pressures at 25°C (P_{25}). The P_{25} values were estimated from T_{des} values using an empirical correlation [\log P_{25}(Pa) = -0.0854 \times T_{des}(°C) - 1.792] obtained from vapor pressures of a series of C_{13}-C_{22} monocarboxylic acids (chattopadhyay and Ziemann, 2005) measured using the TPTD technique (Chattopadhyay et al., 2001). These values are probably accurate to within about one order of magnitude.

*Homologous Linear Alkenes.* The mass spectral patterns observed for the aerosol products from reactions of other linear alkenes are consistent with those from 1-tetradecene and 7-tetradecene. The real-time mass spectrum of aerosol from the reaction
Figure 6.9 Real-time mass spectrum of aerosol formed in the reaction of 1-heptene with NO$_3$ radicals.
of 1-heptene \([\text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_4\text{CH}=\text{CH}_2]\), which was the smallest alkene to form aerosol, is shown in Figure 6.9. For this alkene, \(R_X = \text{CH}_3\text{CH}_2\) and \(R_Y = \text{H}\) in Figures 6.1 and 6.2.

The molecular weight of 1-heptene is 98 compared to 196 for 1-tetradecene, so corresponding peaks in the mass spectra differ by 98 mass units. As expected, major high-mass peaks in the 1-heptene reaction mass spectrum are present at \(m/z\) 235, 190, and 174, corresponding to \(m/z\) 333, 288, and 272 for the 1-tetradecene reaction. No peak is present at \(m/z\) 188, which corresponds to \(m/z\) 286. This is apparently because the pathway for forming the \(m/z\) 286 ion, as proposed in Figure 6.5, is not accessible to the 1-heptene reaction product. This pathway involves a 6-member ring transition state, and so requires a terminal alkene having at least 8 carbons. We observed peaks indicative of this pathway in the mass spectra from reactions of 1-tetradecene, 1-dodecene and 1-decene, but not 1-octene and 1-heptene. The absence of a peak for 1-octene, even though it has 8 carbons, is probably because abstraction would occur at a primary hydrogen. This requires more energy than for the secondary hydrogens available in terminal alkenes having 9 or more carbons.

**Contributions of First- and Second-Generation Reaction Products to SOA Formation.** Thermal desorption profiles of single \(m/z\) values are valuable for identifying
products, but do not provide quantitative information. Profiles of the total ion signal, however, can be used for this purpose. Because the total ion signal is approximately proportional to the organic mass (Crable and Coggeshall, 1958), the mass fraction of a component can be estimated from the normalized area under its desorption peak. This is equivalent to using a total ion chromatogram to estimate compound concentrations in GC-MS analysis. The approach is demonstrated in Figure 6.10 for aerosol formed from reactions of the homologous series of terminal alkenes: 1-tetradecene, 1-dodecene, 1-decene, and 1-octene.

In most cases, single compounds cannot be resolved in the plots of total ion signal, and peaks instead represent a group of compounds with similar volatilities. For example, peaks are observed at 34, 46, and 92 °C in the profile for 1-tetradecene (Figure 6.10A). Comparing with profiles for single m/z values (Figure 6.4) indicates the peak at 34 °C is from compounds that desorb at 30 and 39 °C, while the peak at 46 °C is from the compounds that desorb at 39 °C and 48 °C. The peak at 92 °C is from second-generation products that desorb between 87 and 96 °C. The interpretation of the profiles for other compounds is similar. As expected, product volatility increases as the molecular weight of the parent alkene decreases. For 1-tetradecene, 1-dodecene, 1-decene, and 1-octene,
Figure 6.10 Total ion desorption profiles from TPTD analysis of aerosol formed in the reactions of (A) 1-tetradecene, (B) 1-dodecene, (C) 1-decene, and (D) 1-octene with NO$_3$ radicals.
the mean desorption temperatures are 92, 81, 61, and 47 °C for second-generation products and 40, 29, and 20 for first-generation products (no 1-octene peak).

Although the resolution is not sufficient to quantify single compounds, it is possible to use these results to estimate the relative contributions of first- and second-generation products to the aerosol yield. Based on the discussion above, we can assume that the dividing line between first- and second-generation products in 1-tetradecene aerosol is the minimum in the curve at ~63 °C (Figure 6.10A). We then use the normalized signal below and above this temperature to calculate the fraction of aerosol mass from the two components. We do the same for the other profiles using temperatures of 55 and 35 °C for 1-dodecene and 1-decene, respectively, while 1-octene has only second-generation products. The results of this analysis indicate that the mass fractions of first- and second-generation products are approximately 50:50, 30:70, 10:90, and 0:100, for 1-tetradecene, 1-dodecene, 1-decene, and 1-octene aerosol, respectively.

**An Additional Test of the Proposed Reaction Mechanism.** As shown in Figure 6.2, the proposed mechanism for forming second-generation reaction products requires the presence of δ-hydroxycarbonyls, which isomerize and dehydrate to form unsaturated compounds that then react with NO₃ radicals. A key step in the formation of
δ-hydroxycarbonyls is a 1,5 H-atom shift within the alkoxy radical intermediate. For all the terminal alkenes discussed above, this isomerization pathway is available to the β-alkoxy radicals formed subsequent to addition of NO₃ at the terminal carbon and leads to δ-hydroxycarbonyl nitrate products 11 and 12. Terminal alkenes without H-atoms on the 5-carbon cannot form δ-hydroxycarbonyls or second-generation reaction products.

One terminal alkene that has no H-atoms on the 5-carbon is 3,5,5-trimethyl-1-hexene [CH₃C(CH₃)₂CH₂CH(CH₃)CH=CH₂], which is commercially available. As a test of the proposed mechanism, this compound was reacted with N₂O₅. A reaction was also performed using 2-methyl-1-octene [CH₃(CH₂)₅C(CH₃)=CH₂], which is an isomer of 3,5,5-trimethyl-1-hexene that can form second-generation products. From the discussion above regarding the desorption profiles in Figure 6.10, aerosol formed from C₉ alkenes is composed almost entirely of second-generation products. One would therefore expect that if the mechanism proposed here is correct, the aerosol yield from the reaction of 3,5,5-trimethyl-1-hexene should be very small and much less than that from 2-methyl-1-octene. Reactions were carried out with 1 ppmv 3,5,5-trimethyl-1-hexene and 10 ppmv N₂O₅, and 1 ppmv 2-methyl-1-octene and 2 ppmv N₂O₅. Under these conditions, reactions of both alkenes are calculated to be >90% complete within 30 min, as was
verified by GC analysis of the amount of reacted alkene. The results of the experiments were consistent with the predictions of the reaction mechanism: the aerosol yield from 2-methyl-1-octene was 10%, while no aerosol was formed from 3,5,5-trimethyl-1-hexene.

6.5 Conclusions

The results of this study show that SOA formation from reactions of NO$_3$ radicals with linear alkenes involves both first- and second-generation products. The most important first-generation aerosol products are hydroxynitrates, carbonylnitrates, nitrooxyperoxy nitrates, and dihydroxynitrates. Although δ-hydroxycarboxyls are too volatile to form SOA directly, they are key intermediates in the formation of lower volatility second-generation products. Because of the 1,4 configuration of the hydroxyl and carbonyl groups in δ-hydroxycarbonyls, these compounds can readily isomerize to cyclic hemiacetals and then dehydrate to form substituted dihydrofurans. The double bonds in dihydrofurans are extremely reactive towards NO$_3$ radicals, so these compounds are rapidly converted to lower volatility hydroxy and oxodinitrooxytetrahydrofurans. It is not known if the isomerization of δ-hydroxycarboxyls to cyclic hemiacetals occurs in
the gas phase or requires a surface (particles or walls), but our previous studies indicated that hydroperoxycarbonyls can isomerize in the gas phase (Ziemann, 2003).

For the C₆-C₁₄ alkenes studied here at concentrations of 1 ppmv, SOA formed only for alkenes ≥ C₇. The SOA formed from reactions of C₇-C₉ alkenes consisted solely of second-generation products. First-generation products first appeared in SOA from C₁₀ alkenes, and their contribution to the aerosol mass increased with increasing carbon number. In the case of 1-tetradecene, the largest alkene studied, the mass fractions of first- and second-generation products in the aerosol were ~50:50. These results are indicative of enhanced gas-to-particle partitioning for the lower volatility products formed from larger alkenes.

The important role observed here for d-hydroxycarbonyls (through conversion to dihydrofurans) in SOA formation is likely to be of general applicability since d-hydroxycarbonyls are also formed from reactions of hydrocarbons with OH radicals and O₃. In the atmosphere, dihydrofurans should react primarily with O₃ and NO₃ radicals (Martin et al., 2002), which indicates that the importance of these oxidants in SOA formation is not limited to reactions of unsaturated hydrocarbons. These reactions open efficient pathways for forming low volatility products, which are not currently included
in models of SOA chemistry. Elsewhere we will demonstrate the importance of $d$-hydroxycarbonyls in SOA formation from reactions of alkanes with OH radicals in the presence of NO$_x$ (Lim and Ziemann, 2005).
6.6 References


Atkinson R., 2000. Atmospheric Chemistry of VOCs and NO\textsubscript{x}. \textit{Atmos. Environ.}, 34, 2063–2101.


Chattopadhyay, S. and Ziemann, P. J., 2005. Vapor Pressures of Substituted and Unsubstituted Monocarboxylic and Dicarboxylic Acids Measured Using an Improved


Chapter 7

General Conclusion

This thesis is focused on the mechanism of secondary organic aerosol (SOA) formation from the OH and NO₃ radical-initiated reactions of the alkenes in an environmental chamber. For selected systems, the mechanisms are modeled based on yield measurements, branching ratios, and vapor pressures. The chemical compositions of aerosol products were analyzed with a thermal desorption particle beam mass spectrometer (TDPBMS), and nitrate products were quantified with a high-performance liquid chromatograph (HPLC) with a UV-vis detector. The nitrate products were identified by coupling a TDPBMS to a HPLC as well as $^1$H NMR spectroscopy analysis.

Yield measurements of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates in the SOA formed from linear alkene reactions with OH-radicals in the presence of NOₓ are discussed in Chapter 2. The normalized $\beta$-hydroxynitrate yields in SOA for OH radical addition to a C=C double bond, which increased as the carbon number increases in C₈-C₁₇ 1-alkenes and reached the plateau at C₁₄, was 0.140 ± 0.009 for an average of C₁₄-C₁₇. The yields of dihydroxynitrates were constant over the range of C₁₀-C₁₇ with an average yield f 0.039 ± 0.006. Based on measured yields of the $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, the branching
ratios for the formation of the $\beta$-hydroxynitrates from reactions of $\beta$-hydroperoxy radicals with NO were estimated as 0.13-0.15. The lower yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates compared to alkyl nitrates is due to hydrogen bonding between hydroxy and peroxy groups of $\beta$-hydroperoxy radical-NO intermediates. This effect was enhanced by the presence of NH$_3$, suggesting hydrogen bonding between the intermediate and NH$_3$.

In Chapter 3, a model is developed to calculate the composition and yields of SOA formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of linear alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$. The model includes a quantitative chemical mechanism developed using the measured yields of products, calculated branching ratios, and estimated vapor pressures. The major SOA products are $\beta$-hydroxynitrites, dihydroxynitrates, cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, and dimers formed from dihydroxycarbonyls. Cyclic hemiacetals, dihydrofurans, and dimers in the SOA are all formed from dihydroxycarbonyls, and the yields of those dihydroxycarbonyl products in the SOA were estimated using the branching ratios and compound vapor pressures. Gas-particle partitioning of the dihydroxycarbonyl products was calculated for two different cases. In one case, all the products were assumed to be entirely in non-volatile form such as cyclic hemiacetals, and in the other case the products were assumed to undergo gas-particle partitioning with the vapor pressures of
linear dihydroxycarbonyls. The SOA yields calculated with both models agree very well with the measured SOA yields in the high carbon number region where the models predict similar gas-particle partitioning. In the region where differences in gas-particle partitioning are significant, below C$_{13}$ in this study, the SOA yields predicted by the non-volatile model are too high and those predicted by the gas-particle partitioning model are too low. This indicates that the formation of products from dihydroxycarbonyls occurs through reversible reactions, which will be difficult to incorporate into the model without more information.

In Chapter 4, results of measurements of the yields of organic nitrate products formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$ are discussed. The OH addition-normalized yields of large $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates, whose formation is not affected by carbon number, were 0.225 ± 0.007, 0.055 ± 0.006, and 0.042 ± 0.006, respectively. The $\beta$-hydroxynitrinate yield was not affected by the addition of NH$_3$, but increased by ~20% (compared to dry air) at 50% RH. Combining the $\beta$-hydroxynitrate yields measured in Chapters 2 and 4, the relative ratios for forming primary, secondary, and tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyalkyl radicals by OH radical addition to the double bond are 1.0:1.9:4.3, and the
branching ratios for forming $\beta$-hydroxynitrates from reactions of primary, secondary, and tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals with NO are 0.12, 0.15, and 0.25.

A quantitative chemical model of OH radical-initiated reactions of 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$ is developed in Chapter 5. For 2-methyl-1-alkenes, the major products were $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, trihydroxynitrates, dihydroxycarbonyls, trihydroxycarbonyls, cyclic hemiacetals, and dihydrofurans. No dimer formation was observed for this system, unlike the reactions of 1-alkenes, apparently because of low yields of dihydroxycarbonyls and/or reduced reactivity of dihydroxyaldehydes due to electron donation by the added methyl group. Desorption profiles of characteristic peaks of trihydroxycarbonyls and dihydroxycarbonyls are indicative of equilibrium between dihydroxycarbonyls or trihydroxycarbonyls, cyclic hemiacetals, and dihydrofurans. The models initially over-predicted the SOA yields for high carbon numbers. This led to a re-evaluation of the reaction mechanism and consideration of the possibility that decomposition pathways involving $\alpha$-hydroxyalkoxy radicals should be added. In order to achieve agreement between the model and measurements, ~90% of $\alpha$-hydroxyalkyl radicals, which initially were all expected to react to form SOA products, would need to react to form volatile decomposition products.
With this adjustment, the model worked fairly well for the range of carbon numbers studied here, indicating that the estimated product vapor pressures were reasonably accurate.

\[ \text{NO}_3 \text{ radical-initiated reactions of } C_6-C_{14} \text{ alkenes are investigated and discussed in Chapter 6. First-generation products and second-generation products were observed in this study. The major first-generation SOA products include hydroxynitrates, carbonylnitrates, nitrooxyperoxynitrates, and dihydroxynitrates. } \delta \text{-Hydroxycarbonyls, which are first-generation products, are generally too volatile to be observed in SOA, but they partition into particles by isomerizing to form cyclic hemiacetals. Cyclic hemiacetals dehydrate to form dihydrofurans, and dihydrofurans react with } \text{NO}_3 \text{ radicals to generate second-generation products. The isomerization pathway was confirmed by the results of reactions of 3,5,5-trimethyl-1-hexene and 2-methyl-1-octene with } \text{NO}_3 \text{ radicals. The major second-generation SOA products were hydroxy- and oxo-dinitrooxytetrahydrofurans. For reactions of } C_7-C_9 \text{ alkenes, the SOA is comprised entirely of second-generation products, but for larger alkenes first-generation products also contribute.} \]
The studies presented in this dissertation add substantial new insights into the mechanisms and chemistry of SOA formation from radical-initiated reactions of alkenes. The organic nitrate measurements are the first to date of the yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates in SOA formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of linear alkenes and 2-methyl-1-alkenes in the presence of NO$_x$. The technique used for identification, which consists of the TDPBMS coupled to a HPLC via an atomizer, can also be used to identify and quantify other compounds. The quantified relative ratios for forming primary, secondary, and tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyalkyl radicals by OH radical addition to the double bond and the branching ratios for forming $\beta$-hydroxynitrates from reactions of primary, secondary, and tertiary $\beta$-hydroxyperoxy radicals comprise complete sets of values that can be incorporated into other models. The comparisons made between measured SOA yields and values calculate using the models developed here indicate that the chemical composition and yields of SOA can be accurately modeled when sufficiently detailed mechanisms and vapor pressures are available, but that it will be necessary in the future to better understand the particle-phase chemistry that can form SOA products. Such information should help to improve the agreement between the SOA model results and ambient measurements from field studies.
Appendix A

Supporting Information for Chapter 2

Table A.1

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Carbon Number</th>
<th>(a_{C=C})^a</th>
<th>(\beta)-hydroxynitrates</th>
<th>Dihydroxynitrates</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(a_{C=C}) yield</td>
<td>(a_{C=C}) yield</td>
<td>(a_{C=C}) yield</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-C8</td>
<td>0.842</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-C9</td>
<td>0.816</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.006</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-C10</td>
<td>0.793</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.008</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-C11</td>
<td>0.770</td>
<td>0.014</td>
<td>0.018</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-C12</td>
<td>0.749</td>
<td>0.031</td>
<td>0.041</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-C13</td>
<td>0.729</td>
<td>0.046</td>
<td>0.063</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-C14</td>
<td>0.710</td>
<td>0.078</td>
<td>0.110</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-C15</td>
<td>0.691</td>
<td>0.070</td>
<td>0.101</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-C16</td>
<td>0.674</td>
<td>0.059</td>
<td>0.088</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-C17</td>
<td>0.657</td>
<td>0.062</td>
<td>0.094</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7-C14</td>
<td>0.822</td>
<td>0.011</td>
<td>0.013</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7-C15</td>
<td>0.808</td>
<td>0.065</td>
<td>0.080</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-C17</td>
<td>0.780</td>
<td>0.116</td>
<td>0.149</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

^aThe fraction of the OH radical reaction that occurred by addition to the double bond, \(a_{C=C} = k_{\text{add}}/(k_{\text{add}} + k_{\text{abs}})\), where \(k_{\text{add}}\) and \(k_{\text{abs}}\) are the rate constants for OH radical addition and H-atom abstraction, respectively, were calculated using equations for \(k_{\text{abs}}\) (Kwok and Atkinson, 1995) and \(k_{\text{add}}\) (Nishino et al., 2009) developed by Atkinson and co-workers from measured rate constant data. For 1-alkenes, \(k_{\text{abs}} = 2.47 + 1.4 \times (\text{CN}-5)\) and \(k_{\text{add}} = 28 + 9 \times [1-\exp(-0.35 \times (\text{CN}-3))]\), where CN is the carbon number and k values are in units of \(10^{12} \text{ cm}^3 \text{ molecule}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}\). For cis and trans internal alkenes, \(k_{\text{abs}} = 4.93 + 1.4 \times (\text{CN}-8)\), \(k_{\text{add}}(\text{cis}) = 56.4\), and \(k_{\text{add}}(\text{trans}) = 64\). These equations were used to calculate \(a_{C=C}\) values for 7-tetradecene, 7-pentadecene, and 8-heptadecene using their measured \textit{cis} and \textit{trans} isomer fractions of 0.30:0.70, 0.25:0.75, and 0.25:0.75.
bThe C₈ and C₉ dihydroxynitrates could not be analyzed because of peak overlap with the solvent.
References


Table A.2

$^1$H NMR Spectral Data for $\beta$-Hydroxynitrates and Dihydroxynitrates.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>compound</th>
<th>chemical shift (ppm)</th>
<th>assignment</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$C_{14}$ [this study]</td>
<td>$C_4$ [Muthuramu et al., 1993]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$1H2NC_n$</td>
<td>0.889 (t, 3H)</td>
<td>1.010 (t, 3H)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1.337 (m)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1.698 (m, 3H)</td>
<td>1.747 (m, 2H)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3.745 (dd, 1H)</td>
<td>3.741 (dd, 1H)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3.849 (dd, 1H)</td>
<td>3.839 (dd, 1H)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5.126 (m, 1H)</td>
<td>5.064 (m, 1H)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$1N2HC_n$</td>
<td>0.889 (t, 3H)</td>
<td>1.018 (t, 3H)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1.535 (m, 3H)</td>
<td>1.581 (m, 2H)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3.955 (m, 1H)</td>
<td>3.875 (m, 1H)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4.362 (dd, 1H)</td>
<td>4.365 (dd, 1H)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4.497 (dd, 1H)</td>
<td>4.502 (dd, 1H)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$4N1,2HC_{14}$</td>
<td>0.889 (t, 3H)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1.270-1.872</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$5N1,2HC_{14}$</td>
<td>3.467 (dd, 1H)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3.704 (m, 2H)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5.069 (m, 1H)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Abbreviations used: doublet of doublet (dd), multiplet (m), triplet (t), broad (br)
The NMR peak assignments for C\textsubscript{14} \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates formed in the chamber reaction of 1-tetradecene are shown in Table A.2. For comparison, assignments from Muthuramu et al. (1993) for C\textsubscript{4} \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates are also shown. The chemical shifts were similar for C\textsubscript{14} and C\textsubscript{4} \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates, with two exceptions: large peaks corresponding to \((\text{CH}_2)_{10}\) protons were observed for C\textsubscript{14} but not C\textsubscript{4}, as expected, and CH-OH hydroxy protons observed at 2.200 and 2.330 ppm for the two C\textsubscript{4} isomers were not clearly observed for the C\textsubscript{14} isomers. This is not surprising, since the position of hydroxy proton peaks can vary with analysis conditions. The hydroxy proton peaks in the C\textsubscript{14} isomers probably overlapped with CH\textsubscript{2} proton peaks at 1.535 ppm from CH\textsubscript{2}-CHOH in the 1N2HC\textsubscript{14} isomer and at 1.698 ppm from CH\textsubscript{2}-CHONO\textsubscript{2} in the 1H2NC\textsubscript{14} isomer. This conclusion is supported by the observation that the integrated proton signals for the CH\textsubscript{2} groups at 1.535 and 1.698 ppm corresponded to 3 rather than 2 protons.

Dihydroxynitrate peaks were assigned based on \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrate peak assignments. The chemical shifts of the CH\textsubscript{3} and CH-ONO\textsubscript{2} protons matched those in the 1H2NC\textsubscript{14} isomer. Alkyl protons in CH-OH and CH\textsubscript{2}-OH groups appeared in the same region as the corresponding protons in the \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates. The peaks were differentiated based on
the number of protons. A large peak from \((\text{CH}_2)_x\) groups was present at 1.270 ppm, as in the \(1\text{N}2\text{HC}_{14}\) isomer, and additional smaller peaks were also observed downfield as far as 1.872 ppm.
Reference

Appendix B

Supporting Information for Chapter 3

Branching Ratio Calculations

Branching ratios for OH radical addition to the double bond, $\alpha_{\text{C=C}} = k_{\text{add}}/(k_{\text{add}} + k_{\text{abs}})$, and for H-atom abstraction, $1-\alpha_{\text{C=C}}$, where $k_{\text{add}}$ and $k_{\text{abs}}$ are rate constants for addition and abstraction and their sum is equal to the total rate constant, were calculated using equations for $k_{\text{abs}}$ (Kwok and Atkinson, 1995) and $k_{\text{add}}$ (Nishino et al., 2008) developed by Atkinson and co-workers from measured rate constants. For 1-alkenes, $k_{\text{abs}} = 2.47 + 1.4 \times (\text{CN}-5)$ and $k_{\text{add}} = 28 + 9 \times [1-\exp(-0.35 \times (\text{CN}-3))]$, where CN is the carbon number and k values are in units of $10^{-12}$ cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$. For cis and trans internal alkenes, $k_{\text{abs}} = 4.93 + 1.4 \times (\text{CN}-8)$, $k_{\text{add}}(\text{cis}) = 56.4$, and $k_{\text{add}}(\text{trans}) = 64$, and were used with the measured fractions of cis and trans isomers to calculate weighted values of $\alpha_{\text{C=C}}$ (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2008).

Values for $\alpha_1-\alpha_6$ were taken from (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2008). They were determined from measured yields of $\beta$-hydroxynitrates [P1, P2]. For 1-alkenes, $\alpha_1$ and $\alpha_2$ are different, whereas for internal alkenes, it was assumed the size of alkyl groups $R_1$ and
R₂ do not affect branching ratios so \( \alpha_1 = \alpha_2 \). Values of \( \alpha_3-\alpha_6 \) differed between the two classes of alkenes, but within a class it was assumed that branching ratios for formation of \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates from reactions of NO with \( \beta \)-hydroxyperoxy radicals are the same, so \( \alpha_3 = \alpha_4 \) and \( \alpha_5 = \alpha_6 \). As discussed previously (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2008), one can instead assume that \( \alpha_3 = 1.5 \times \alpha_4 \) for \( \beta \)-hydroxyperoxy radicals formed from reactions of 1-alkenes, as is the case for alkylperoxy radicals (Cassanelli et al., 2007). A slightly different set of branching ratios are obtained, but when these were used instead the results were essentially the same, and so are not presented.

Values for \( \alpha_7-\alpha_{16} \) were estimated using alkoxy radical rate constants calculated using the structure-reactivity method of Atkinson (2007), measured aldehyde yields \([P5, P6]\) (Aschmann and Atkinson, in preparation), and measured \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates \([P1, P2]\) and dihydroxynitrates \([P7, P8]\) yields (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2008). Rate constants calculated for alkoxy radicals formed from alkenes studied here predict \( O_2 \) reactions are too slow to compete with decomposition or isomerization, so \( \alpha_7 = \alpha_8 = 0 \). The branching ratios \( \alpha_9-\alpha_{16} \) were determined with the aid of Fig. 1, which shows that the molar yield (moles of product formed/moles of alkene reacted) of a compound is equal to the product of branching ratios along the pathway leading to its formation.
For 1-alkenes, the molar yield of \textbf{P6} per \ OH addition, \( \frac{Y_{P6}}{\alpha_{C=C}} \), which has contributions from both \ OH radical addition pathways, is equal to \((\alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C}) \times \alpha_5 \times \alpha_6) + (\alpha_2/\alpha_{C=C}) \times \alpha_6 \times \alpha_{10})\). Substituting \( \alpha_1, \alpha_2, \alpha_5, \) and \( \alpha_6 \) from Table 1, \( \alpha_{C=C} = 0.84 \) and \( Y_{P6} = 0.33 \) for the sum of heptanal (0.28) and 4-hydroxyheptanal (0.05) (4-hydroxyheptanal is not shown in Figure 1, but is also formed by the alkoxy radical decomposition pathway) from reaction of 1-octene (Aschmann and Atkinson, in preparation), gives \( 0.60 \alpha_9 + 0.26 \alpha_{10} = 0.39 \). This equation was combined with the ratio \( \alpha_9/\alpha_{10} = 1.5 \) calculated using the structure-reactivity method of Atkinson (2007) to give \( \alpha_9 = 0.51 \) and \( \alpha_{10} = 0.34 \), and then \( \alpha_{11} = 0.49 \) and \( \alpha_{12} = 0.66 \). Similarly, \( (Y_{P7} + Y_{P8})/\alpha_{C=C} \), which is 0.040 for 1-alkenes (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2008) and has contributions from both \ OH radical addition pathways, is equal to \((\alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C}) \times \alpha_5 \times \alpha_{11} \times \alpha_{13}) + (\alpha_2/\alpha_{C=C}) \times \alpha_6 \times \alpha_{12} \times \alpha_{14})\). Substituting \( \alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C}, \alpha_2/\alpha_{C=C}, \alpha_5, \alpha_6, \alpha_{11} \) and \( \alpha_{12} \) from Table 1 and assuming branching ratios for dihydroxynitrate formation from dihydroxyalkoxy radicals are equal, gives \( \alpha_{13} = \alpha_{14} = 0.08 \) and then \( \alpha_{15} = \alpha_{16} = 0.92 \).

For internal alkenes, it was assumed that the size of alkyl groups \( R_1 \) and \( R_2 \) do not affect branching ratios so \( \alpha_9 = \alpha_{10}, \alpha_{11} = \alpha_{12}, \alpha_{13} = \alpha_{14}, \) and \( \alpha_{15} = \alpha_{16} \). The molar yield of \textbf{P6} per \ OH addition, \( \frac{Y_{P6}}{\alpha_{C=C}} \), which has equal contributions from both \ OH radical
addition pathways, is equal to \[ \left[ \frac{2 \alpha_1}{\alpha_{C=C}} \right] \times \alpha_5 \times \alpha_9 \]. Substituting values for \( \alpha_1 \) and \( \alpha_5 \) from Table 1, \( \alpha_{C=C} = 0.82 \), and \( Y_{P6} = 0.47 \) for the reaction of \textit{trans}-7-tetradecene (Aschmann and Atkinson, in preparation) (note the measured sum of the yields of heptanal (0.86) and 4-hydroxyheptanal (0.07) was 0.93, but for this symmetric alkene alkoxy radical decomposition leads to two heptanal molecules, only one of which corresponds to \textbf{P6}) gives \( \alpha_9 = \alpha_{10} = 0.67 \) and therefore \( \alpha_{11} = \alpha_{12} = 0.33 \). Similarly, \( (Y_{P7} + Y_{P8})/\alpha_{C=C} \), which is equal to 0.006 for internal alkenes (Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2008) and has equal contributions from both OH radical addition pathways, is equal to \\
\[ \frac{2 \alpha_1}{\alpha_{C=C}} \times \alpha_5 \times \alpha_{11} \times \alpha_{13} \]. Substituting values for \( \alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C} \), \( \alpha_5 \), and \( \alpha_{11} \) from Table 1 gives \( \alpha_{13} = \alpha_{14} = 0.02 \) and therefore \( \alpha_{15} = \alpha_{16} = 0.98 \). The lower branching ratios for formation of organic nitrates from reactions of NO with dihydroxyalkoxy radicals, \( \alpha_{13} \) and \( \alpha_{14} \), compared to \( \beta \)-hydroxyalkoxy radicals, \( \alpha_3 \) and \( \alpha_4 \), suggests a significant influence of hydrogen bonding, which is reasonable (O’Brien et al., 1998).
References


The fraction of $\beta$-hydroxynitrate in the particle phase calculated as the ratio of the measured yield to the yield in the plateau region, where the compound is essentially entirely in the particle phase. The curves were calculated using gas-particle partitioning theory (Pankow, 1994), estimated mean molecular weights of particulate organic compounds assumed to be the same as the hydroxynitrates formed in the alkene reaction (equal to the molecular weight of the alkene + 79), assumed activity coefficients of unity, measured organic aerosol mass concentrations, and vapor pressures chosen to achieve good fits to the data. The vapor pressure equations are given in Table B.1.
Reference

Table B.1

Vapor pressure equations used to calculate the curves shown in Fig. S1 and gas-particle partitioning in SOA yield calculations.

\[ \log P(\text{Pa}) = A - (0.4537 \times \text{carbon number}) \]

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A</th>
<th>Logarithmic vapor pressures ((\log P(\text{Pa})))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1-alkenes</td>
<td>3.900</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1H2NC(_n)</td>
<td>4.432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1N2HC(_n)</td>
<td>2.424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dihydroxynitrates</td>
<td>3.955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dihydroxycarbonyls</td>
<td>4.698</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,4-hydroxynitrates</td>
<td>2.421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>internal alkenes</td>
<td>4.698</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\beta)-hydroxynitrates</td>
<td>4.698</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dihydroxynitrates</td>
<td>3.221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dihydroxycarbonyls</td>
<td>4.221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,4-hydroxynitrates</td>
<td>4.698</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Vapor pressures of 1H2NC\textsubscript{n} isomers were calculated using a linear least-squares fit to vapor pressures measured for 1,2-dialkyl nitrates using gas chromatography (Fischer and Ballschmiter, 1998), multiplied by a factor of 2, which provides a good fit to the data in Fig. S1. Vapor pressures of 1N2HC\textsubscript{n} isomers and \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates formed from internal alkenes were calculated by multiplying the values for 1H2NC\textsubscript{n} isomers by 3.4 and 6.3. The good agreement with 1,2-dialkyl nitrate vapor pressures for the 1H2NC\textsubscript{n} isomers is reasonable, since 8-nitrooxyhexadecane and 8-hydroxyhexadecane present in a mixture desorbed at similar temperatures during TPTD analysis (unpublished results), indicating that nitrate and hydroxyl groups have similar effects on vapor pressure.

Furthermore, vapor pressures are sensitive to the positions of functional groups on the carbon chain [values for 1- and 2-alkyl nitrates differ by a factor of \(\sim\)2 (Luxenhofer and Ballschmiter, 1996)] so differences in the vapor pressures of isomers is not surprising.

Dihydroxynitrate vapor pressures were calculated by dividing the values for 1H2NC\textsubscript{n} isomers and \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrate isomers formed from internal alkenes by 30, the difference in vapor pressures of 1-alkyl nitrates and 1,2-dialkyl nitrates. Dihydroxycarbonyl vapor pressures were calculated by dividing the values for 1N2HC\textsubscript{n} isomers and \(\beta\)-hydroxynitrates formed from internal alkenes by 3, which our thermal desorption studies
of multifunctional long-chain compounds indicate gives a reasonable estimate for the
effect of a carbonyl group. For 1,4-hydroxynitrate products of H-atom abstraction, vapor
pressures were assumed to be the same as those of $\beta$-hydroxynitrate isomers formed from
internal alkenes.
References

Fischer, R. G. and Ballschmiter, K., 1998. Prediction of the Environmental Distribution of Alkyl Dinitrates – Chromatographic Determination of Vapor Pressure \( P^0 \), Water Solubility \( S_{H2O} \), Gas Water Partition Coefficient \( K_{GW} \) (Henry’s Law Constant) and Octanol-Water Partition Coefficient \( K_{OW} \). *Fresenius J. Anal. Chem.*, 360, 769-776.

Table B.2

Estimated contributions of secondary reaction products to yields of SOA formed from OH radical-initiated reactions of 1-alkenes and internal alkenes in dry air in the presence of NO$_x$.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>alkenes</th>
<th>yield</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1-alkenes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_8$</td>
<td>0.028</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_9$</td>
<td>0.031</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{10}$</td>
<td>0.034</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{11}$</td>
<td>0.035</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{12}$</td>
<td>0.036</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{13}$</td>
<td>0.031</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{14}$</td>
<td>0.021</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{15}$</td>
<td>0.012</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{16}$</td>
<td>0.007</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{17}$</td>
<td>0.007</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>internal alkenes</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{14}$</td>
<td>0.005</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{15}$</td>
<td>0.005</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{17}$</td>
<td>0.003</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*The yield is (mass of product in SOA)/(mass of alkene reacted).*
Table B.3

Modeled Yields of SOA Products Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of Linear Alkenes in the Presence of NO\(_x\), Assuming Dihydroxycarbonyls were in Gas-Particle Partitioning Equilibrium.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>alkenes</th>
<th>yield(^a)</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th>HAA</th>
<th>Total</th>
<th>Measured</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>HN</td>
<td>DHN</td>
<td>DHC</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-alkenes</td>
<td>P1</td>
<td>P2</td>
<td>P7</td>
<td>P8</td>
<td>P9</td>
<td>P10</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_8)</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.048</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_9)</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.011</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.025</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_{10})</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.009</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.022</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_{11})</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.013</td>
<td>0.008</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.034</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_{12})</td>
<td>0.018</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.024</td>
<td>0.014</td>
<td>0.039</td>
<td>0.022</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_{13})</td>
<td>0.067</td>
<td>0.016</td>
<td>0.026</td>
<td>0.015</td>
<td>0.156</td>
<td>0.090</td>
<td>0.009</td>
<td>0.379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_{14})</td>
<td>0.082</td>
<td>0.025</td>
<td>0.025</td>
<td>0.014</td>
<td>0.196</td>
<td>0.113</td>
<td>0.018</td>
<td>0.473</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_{15})</td>
<td>0.087</td>
<td>0.033</td>
<td>0.024</td>
<td>0.014</td>
<td>0.214</td>
<td>0.124</td>
<td>0.030</td>
<td>0.526</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_{16})</td>
<td>0.087</td>
<td>0.035</td>
<td>0.023</td>
<td>0.013</td>
<td>0.216</td>
<td>0.125</td>
<td>0.038</td>
<td>0.537</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_{17})</td>
<td>0.085</td>
<td>0.035</td>
<td>0.022</td>
<td>0.013</td>
<td>0.210</td>
<td>0.122</td>
<td>0.041</td>
<td>0.528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>internal alkenes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_{14})</td>
<td>0.026</td>
<td>0.026</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.079</td>
<td>0.079</td>
<td>0.007</td>
<td>0.223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_{15})</td>
<td>0.055</td>
<td>0.055</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.117</td>
<td>0.117</td>
<td>0.017</td>
<td>0.367</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_{17})</td>
<td>0.068</td>
<td>0.068</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.123</td>
<td>0.123</td>
<td>0.025</td>
<td>0.413</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\)The yield is (mass of product in SOA)/(mass of alkene reacted). Products are hydroxynitrates (HN), dihydroxynitrates (DHN), dihydroxycarbonyls (DHC), and products formed by the H-atom abstraction pathway (HAA). Refer to Figure 1 for structures of products P1, P2, …
Table B.4

Modeled Yields of SOA Products Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of Linear Alkenes in the Presence of NO₅, Assuming Dihydroxycarbonyls were Entirely in the Particle Phase as Non-Volatile Cyclic Hemiaceitals, Dihydrofurans, or Dimers.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>alkenes</th>
<th>yieldᵃ</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>HN</td>
<td>DHN</td>
<td>DHC</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-alkenes</td>
<td>P1</td>
<td>P2</td>
<td>P7</td>
<td>P8</td>
<td>P9</td>
<td>P10</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₈</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.007</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.326</td>
<td>0.188</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.526</td>
<td>0.048</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₉</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.017</td>
<td>0.010</td>
<td>0.306</td>
<td>0.177</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.515</td>
<td>0.154</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₁₀</td>
<td>0.007</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.020</td>
<td>0.012</td>
<td>0.289</td>
<td>0.167</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.496</td>
<td>0.317</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₁₁</td>
<td>0.017</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.024</td>
<td>0.014</td>
<td>0.274</td>
<td>0.158</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.490</td>
<td>0.344</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₁₂</td>
<td>0.038</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.026</td>
<td>0.015</td>
<td>0.261</td>
<td>0.151</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.500</td>
<td>0.468</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₁₃</td>
<td>0.072</td>
<td>0.018</td>
<td>0.026</td>
<td>0.015</td>
<td>0.250</td>
<td>0.144</td>
<td>0.011</td>
<td>0.536</td>
<td>0.459</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₁₄</td>
<td>0.083</td>
<td>0.026</td>
<td>0.025</td>
<td>0.014</td>
<td>0.240</td>
<td>0.138</td>
<td>0.019</td>
<td>0.545</td>
<td>0.501</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₁₅</td>
<td>0.087</td>
<td>0.033</td>
<td>0.024</td>
<td>0.014</td>
<td>0.230</td>
<td>0.133</td>
<td>0.030</td>
<td>0.551</td>
<td>0.530</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₁₆</td>
<td>0.087</td>
<td>0.035</td>
<td>0.023</td>
<td>0.013</td>
<td>0.222</td>
<td>0.128</td>
<td>0.039</td>
<td>0.547</td>
<td>0.538</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₁₇</td>
<td>0.085</td>
<td>0.035</td>
<td>0.022</td>
<td>0.013</td>
<td>0.214</td>
<td>0.124</td>
<td>0.041</td>
<td>0.534</td>
<td>0.487</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>internal alkenes</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₁₄</td>
<td>0.035</td>
<td>0.035</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.141</td>
<td>0.141</td>
<td>0.010</td>
<td>0.370</td>
<td>0.105</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₁₅</td>
<td>0.057</td>
<td>0.057</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.136</td>
<td>0.136</td>
<td>0.018</td>
<td>0.410</td>
<td>0.188</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₁₇</td>
<td>0.068</td>
<td>0.068</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.129</td>
<td>0.129</td>
<td>0.025</td>
<td>0.425</td>
<td>0.405</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

ᵃThe yield is (mass of product in SOA)/(mass of alkene reacted). Products are hydroxynitrates (HN), dihydroxynitrates (DHN), dihydroxycarbonyls (DHC), and products formed by the H-atom abstraction pathway (HAA). Refer to Figure 1 for structures of products P1, P2, …
Appendix C

Supporting Information for Chapter 4

Table C.1

Molar Yields of $\beta$-Hydroxynitrates, Dihydroxynitrates, and Trihydroxynitrates Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NO$_x$ under Dry Conditions.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Carbon number</th>
<th>$\alpha_{C=C}$</th>
<th>1H2NC$_a$ yield</th>
<th>1N2HC$_n$ yield</th>
<th>1H2NC$_a$ + 1N2HC$_n$ yield</th>
<th>1H2NC$_a$ yield</th>
<th>1N2HC$_n$ yield</th>
<th>1H2NC$_a$ yield</th>
<th>1N2HC$_n$ yield</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>C$_4$</td>
<td>0.904</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>NA$^b$</td>
<td>NA$^b$</td>
<td>NA$^b$</td>
<td>NA$^b$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_5$</td>
<td>0.888</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.006</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_6$</td>
<td>0.872</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.022</td>
<td>0.025</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_7$</td>
<td>0.857</td>
<td>0.012</td>
<td>0.015</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.013</td>
<td>0.016</td>
<td>0.030</td>
<td>0.035</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_8$</td>
<td>0.842</td>
<td>0.031</td>
<td>0.037</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.034</td>
<td>0.041</td>
<td>0.040</td>
<td>0.047</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_9$</td>
<td>0.828</td>
<td>0.160</td>
<td>0.193</td>
<td>0.014</td>
<td>0.174</td>
<td>0.210</td>
<td>0.045</td>
<td>0.054</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{10}$</td>
<td>0.814</td>
<td>0.164</td>
<td>0.202</td>
<td>0.019</td>
<td>0.183</td>
<td>0.225</td>
<td>0.044</td>
<td>0.055</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$The fraction of the OH radical reaction that occurred by addition to the double bond, $\alpha_{C=C} = k_{add}/(k_{add} + k_{abs})$, where $k_{add}$ and $k_{abs}$ are the rate constants for OH radical addition and H-atom abstraction, respectively, were calculated using equations for $k_{abs}$ (Kwok and Atkinson, 1995) and $k_{add}$ (Nishino et al., 2009) developed by Atkinson and co-workers from measured rate constant data. For 2-methyl-1-alkenes, $k_{abs} = 2.6 + 1.4 \times (C_n-6)$ and $k_{add} = 51 + 16 \times [1-\exp(-0.35 \times (C_n-3))]$, where $C_n$ is the carbon number and k values are in units of $10^{-12}$ cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$. 

272
The $C_9$ dihydroxynitrates and $C_9 - C_{13}$ trihydroxynitrates could not be analyzed because of peak overlap with the solvent.
References


Table C.2

$^1$H NMR Spectral Data for $\beta$-Hydroxynitrates, Dihydroxynitrates, and Trihydroxynitrates Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Tridecene and 1-Tetradecene in the Presence of NO$_x$.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>compound</th>
<th>2-methyl-1-tridecene [this study]</th>
<th>1-tetradecene [Matsunaga and Ziemann, 2009]</th>
<th>assignment</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1H2NC$_{14}$</td>
<td>0.888 (t, 3H) 1.265</td>
<td>0.889 (t, 3H) 1.337 (m)</td>
<td>CH$_3$ CH$_3$-C (CH$_3$)$_x$ CH$_2$-OH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1.265-1.738</td>
<td>1.698 (m, 3H)</td>
<td>CH$_2$-CH-ONO$_2$ or CH$_3$C-ONO$_2$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3.772 (d, 1H) 3.832 (d, 1H)</td>
<td>3.745 (dd, 1H) 3.849 (dd, 1H)</td>
<td>CH$_3$-OH CH$_3$-OH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5.126 (m, 1H)</td>
<td>5.126 (m, 1H)</td>
<td>CH$_2$-ONO$_2$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,2H4NC$_{14}$</td>
<td>0.888 (t, 3H) 1.182 (d, 3H)</td>
<td>0.889 (t, 3H)</td>
<td>CH$_3$ CH$_3$-C (CH$_3$)$_x$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>+ 1,2H5NC$_{14}$</td>
<td>1.267-1.857</td>
<td>1.270-1.872</td>
<td>CH$_3$-OH hydroxyl protons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3.464 (m, 2H) 5.045 (m, 1H)</td>
<td>3.704 (m, 2H) 5.069 (m, 1H)</td>
<td>CH$_3$-OH CH$_2$-ONO$_2$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,2,4H7NC$_{14}$</td>
<td>0.897 (t, 3H) 1.202 (s, 3H)</td>
<td>1.293-2.137</td>
<td>CH$_3$ CH$_3$-C (CH$_3$)$_x$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>+ 1,2,5H8NC$_{14}$</td>
<td>3.493 (br, 2H) 3.643 (br, 1H)</td>
<td>3.467 (dd, 1H)</td>
<td>CH$_3$-OH CH$_2$-OH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5.062 (m, 1H)</td>
<td>5.069 (m, 1H)</td>
<td>CH$_2$-ONO$_2$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Abbreviations used: doublet of doublet (dd), multiplet (m), triplet (t), broad (br)
The NMR peak assignments for \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates, dihydroxynitrates, and trihydroxynitrates formed in the chamber reaction of 2-methyl-1-tridecene are shown in Table S2. For comparison, assignments from Matsunaga and Ziemann (2009) for linear \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates and dihydroxynitrates formed from the reaction of 1-tetradecene are also shown. For 2-methyl-\( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates, 1N2HC\(_{14}\) data were not available because of the low yield of this compound. As expected, a peak from CH\(_3\)-C protons is observed only in 2-methyl-\( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates, and no peak is observed for a CH-ONO\(_2\) proton. Chemical shifts were similar for all \( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates, except that peaks appeared at 1.265-1.738 ppm for 2-methyl-\( \beta \)-hydroxynitrates. A peak from CH\(_3\)-C is present at 1.265 ppm, and additional peaks, which are not resolved, are also observed downfield as far as 1.738 ppm. Those small peaks are expected to be from (CH\(_2\))\(_x\) protons, a hydroxyl proton, and CH\(_2\) protons of CH\(_2\)-ONO\(_2\). Chemical shifts are also similar for all dihydroxynitrates, except for the CH\(_2\) protons from CH\(_2\)-OH. The peak from 2-methyl-dihydroxynitrate appears at 3.464 ppm, 0.24 ppm lower than the peak from the linear dihydroxynitrate. This suggests that the chemical shifts of CH\(_2\) protons from CH\(_2\)-OH are affected by functional groups at the \( \beta \) position: a methyl group for 2-methyl-dihydroxynitrates, and a H atom for lineardihydroxynitrates. The CH\(_2\) protons from CH\(_2\)-OH of 2-methyl-
dihydroxynitrates are probably shielded by a methyl group, which is electron-donating, and appears slightly upfield from the CH$_2$ protons from CH$_2$-OH in linear dihydroxynitrates. A peak from CH$_3$-C protons is observed only in 2-methyl-dihydroxynitrates and no peak is observed for the CH proton from CH-OH of 2-methyl-dihydroxynitrates, as expected. The peaks from (CH$_2$)$_x$ and hydroxyl protons overlap in the regions from 1.267-1.857 ppm and 1.270-1.872 ppm for 2-methyl-dihydroxynitrates and linear dihydroxynitrates, respectively. Trihydroxynitrate peaks are assigned based on dihydroxynitrate peak assignments. The chemical shifts of corresponding trihydroxynitrate and dihydroxynitrate peaks are similar, and the peak from the CH proton in CH-OH in the trihydroxynitrate appears at a similar chemical shift to the peak from the CH$_2$ protons in CH$_2$-OH in the dihydroxynitrates.
Reference

Appendix D

Supporting Information for Chapter 5

Branching Ratio Calculations

The fraction of OH radical reactions that occurred by addition to the double bond,

\[ a_{C=C} = \frac{k_{\text{add}}}{k_{\text{add}} + k_{\text{abs}}} \]

where \( k_{\text{add}} \) and \( k_{\text{abs}} \) are the rate constants for OH radical addition and H-atom abstraction, respectively, was calculated using equations for \( k_{\text{abs}} \) (Kwok and Atkinson, 1995) and \( k_{\text{add}} \) (Nishino et al., 2009) developed by Atkinson and co-workers from measured rate constant data. For 2-methyl-1-alkenes, \( k_{\text{abs}} = 2.6 + 1.4 \times (C_n - 6) \) and \( k_{\text{add}} = 51 + 16 \times [1 - \exp(-0.35 \times (C_n - 3))] \), where \( C_n \) is the carbon number and \( k \) values are in units of \( 10^{-12} \, \text{cm}^3 \, \text{molecule}^{-1} \, \text{s}^{-1} \).

Values for \( \alpha_{1} - \alpha_{6} \) were taken from Chapter 4, and values for \( \alpha_{7} - \alpha_{12} \) and \( \alpha_{17} - \alpha_{20} \) were estimated using alkoxy radical rate constants calculated using the structure-reactivity method of Atkinson (2007) and OH addition-normalized ketone yields [P6] measured in this study. Rates of reactions of \( O_2 \) with \( \beta \)-hydroxyalkoxy radicals formed from 2-methyl-1-alkenes studied here are predicted to be too slow to compete with
decomposition or isomerization, so $\alpha_7 = \alpha_8 = 0$. The branching ratios $\alpha_{17} = 0$, because there is no H atom available for abstraction in dihydroxyalkoxy radicals with the alkoxy group in the 5-position of the carbon chain. This indicates that all these dihydroxyalkoxy radical isomers isomerize instead by abstraction from a CH$_2$ group, so $\alpha_{19} = 1.0$. The branching ratios $\alpha_{18}$ and $\alpha_{20}$ were calculated using the structure-reactivity method of Atkinson (2007). The branching ratios $\alpha_9$-$\alpha_{16}$ and $\alpha_{21}$-$\alpha_{24}$ were determined with the aid of Figure 5.1, which shows that the molar yield (moles of product formed/moles of alkene reacted) of a compound is equal to the product of branching ratios along the pathway leading to its formation. The molar yield of P6 per OH addition, $Y_{P6}/\alpha_{C=C}$, which has contributions from both OH radical addition pathways, is equal to ($[\alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C}] \times \alpha_5 \times \alpha_9$) + ($[\alpha_2/\alpha_{C=C}] \times \alpha_6 \times \alpha_{10}$). Substituting $\alpha_1$, $\alpha_2$, $\alpha_5$, and $\alpha_6$ from Table 5.1 and $Y_{P6}/\alpha_{C=C} = 0.453$ gives $0.61 \alpha_9 + 0.17 \alpha_{10} = 0.453$. This equation was combined with the ratio $\alpha_9/\alpha_{10} = 1.35$ calculated using the structure-reactivity method of Atkinson (2007) to give $\alpha_9 = 0.62$ and $\alpha_{10} = 0.46$, and then $\alpha_{11} = 0.38$ and $\alpha_{12} = 0.54$.

For $\alpha_{13}$-$\alpha_{16}$, $(Y_{P7} + Y_{P8})/\alpha_{C=C}$, which is 0.055 for 2-methyl-1-alkenes as shown in Chapter 4 and has contributions from both OH radical addition pathways, is equal to

$$([\alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C}] \times \alpha_5 \times \alpha_{11} \times \alpha_{13}) + ([\alpha_2/\alpha_{C=C}] \times \alpha_6 \times \alpha_{12} \times \alpha_{14})$$.

Substituting $\alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C}$, $\alpha_2/\alpha_{C=C}$,
\(\alpha_5, \alpha_6, \alpha_{11}\) and \(\alpha_{12}\) from Table 5.1 and assuming branching ratios for dihydroxynitrate formation from reactions of dihydroxyperoxy radicals with NO are equal, gives \(\alpha_{13} = \alpha_{14}\) = 0.17 and then \(\alpha_{15} = \alpha_{16} = 0.83\).

Similarly, \((Y_{P11} + Y_{P12})/\alpha_{C=C}\), which is 0.042 for 2-methyl-1-alkenes as shown in Chapter 4 and has contributions from both OH radical addition pathways, is equal to

\[
\left(\frac{\alpha_1}{\alpha_{C=C}}\right) \times \alpha_5 \times \alpha_{11} \times \alpha_{15} \times \alpha_{19} \times \alpha_{21} + \left(\frac{\alpha_2}{\alpha_{C=C}}\right) \times \alpha_6 \times \alpha_{12} \times \alpha_{16} \times \alpha_{20} \times \alpha_{22}.
\]

Substituting \(\alpha_1/\alpha_{C=C}, \alpha_2/\alpha_{C=C}, \alpha_5, \alpha_6, \alpha_{11}, \alpha_{12}, \alpha_{19}, \) and \(\alpha_{20}\) from Table 5.1 and assuming branching ratios for trihydroxynitrate formation from reactions of trihydroxyperoxy radicals with NO are equal, gives \(\alpha_{21} = \alpha_{22} = 0.20\) and then \(\alpha_{23} = \alpha_{24} = 0.80\).
References


Table D.1

Calculated SOA Yields of Products Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NOx, Assuming Dihydroxycarbonyls and Trihydroxycarbonyls were in Gas-Particle Partitioning Equilibrium.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>product</th>
<th>SOA yield</th>
<th>C_9</th>
<th>C_10</th>
<th>C_11</th>
<th>C_12</th>
<th>C_13</th>
<th>C_14</th>
<th>C_15</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>HN</td>
<td>P1</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.025</td>
<td>0.076</td>
<td>0.150</td>
<td>0.200</td>
<td>0.213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P2</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.009</td>
<td>0.016</td>
<td>0.021</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DHN</td>
<td>P7</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.010</td>
<td>0.028</td>
<td>0.043</td>
<td>0.047</td>
<td>0.047</td>
<td>0.046</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P8</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.011</td>
<td>0.017</td>
<td>0.019</td>
<td>0.019</td>
<td>0.018</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>THN</td>
<td>P11</td>
<td>0.021</td>
<td>0.040</td>
<td>0.053</td>
<td>0.054</td>
<td>0.052</td>
<td>0.050</td>
<td>0.046</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P12</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.004</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DHC</td>
<td>P9</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P10</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.017</td>
<td>0.036</td>
<td>0.049</td>
<td>0.053</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>THC</td>
<td>P13</td>
<td>0.008</td>
<td>0.029</td>
<td>0.089</td>
<td>0.143</td>
<td>0.163</td>
<td>0.165</td>
<td>0.162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P14</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.008</td>
<td>0.013</td>
<td>0.015</td>
<td>0.016</td>
<td>0.015</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HAA</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.012</td>
<td>0.019</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.037</td>
<td>0.096</td>
<td>0.225</td>
<td>0.373</td>
<td>0.501</td>
<td>0.579</td>
<td>0.597</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Measured</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.023</td>
<td>0.068</td>
<td>0.137</td>
<td>0.167</td>
<td>0.180</td>
<td>0.412</td>
<td>0.465</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*The product SOA yield is the mass of product in SOA/mass of alkene reacted. Products are hydroxynitrates (HN), dihydroxynitrates (DHN), trihydroxynitrates (THN), dihydroxycarbonyls (DHC), trihydroxycarbonyls (THC), and products formed by the H-atom abstraction pathway (HAA). Refer to Figure 5.1 for structures of products P1, P2,...
Table D.2

Calculated SOA Yields of Products Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1- Alkenes in the Presence of NO$_x$, Assuming Dihydroxycarbonyls were Entirely in the Particle Phase as Non-Volatile Cyclic Hemiacetals and Dihydrofurans.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>product</th>
<th>SOA yield</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$C_9$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HN</td>
<td>P1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DHN</td>
<td>P7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>THN</td>
<td>P11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DHC</td>
<td>P9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>THC</td>
<td>P13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HAA</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Measured</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*The product SOA yield is the mass of product in SOA/mass of alkene reacted. Products are hydroxynitrates (HN), dihydroxynitrates (DHN), trihydroxynitrates (THN), dihydroxycarbonyls (DHC), trihydroxycarbonyls (THC), and products formed by the H-atom abstraction pathway (HAA). Refer to Figure 5.1 for structures of products P1, P2,...
Table D.3

Calculated Yields of SOA Products Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NO\textsubscript{x}, Assuming Dihydroxycarboxyls were Entirely in the Particle Phase as Non-Volatile Cyclic Hemiacetals and Dihydrofurans and the Yield of Trihydroxycarboxyls (Gas + Particle) is Reduced from 0.177 to 0.025.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>product</th>
<th>SOA yield</th>
<th>C\textsubscript{9}</th>
<th>C\textsubscript{10}</th>
<th>C\textsubscript{11}</th>
<th>C\textsubscript{12}</th>
<th>C\textsubscript{13}</th>
<th>C\textsubscript{14}</th>
<th>C\textsubscript{15}</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>HN</td>
<td>P1</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.007</td>
<td>0.022</td>
<td>0.060</td>
<td>0.130</td>
<td>0.190</td>
<td>0.209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P2</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.007</td>
<td>0.014</td>
<td>0.020</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DHN</td>
<td>P7</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.012</td>
<td>0.026</td>
<td>0.040</td>
<td>0.046</td>
<td>0.047</td>
<td>0.046</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P8</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.010</td>
<td>0.016</td>
<td>0.018</td>
<td>0.019</td>
<td>0.018</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>THN</td>
<td>P11</td>
<td>0.029</td>
<td>0.044</td>
<td>0.052</td>
<td>0.053</td>
<td>0.052</td>
<td>0.050</td>
<td>0.048</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P12</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.004</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DHC</td>
<td>P9</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P10</td>
<td>0.071</td>
<td>0.068</td>
<td>0.065</td>
<td>0.063</td>
<td>0.061</td>
<td>0.059</td>
<td>0.057</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>THC</td>
<td>P13</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.008</td>
<td>0.013</td>
<td>0.015</td>
<td>0.017</td>
<td>0.016</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P14</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>0.002</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HAA</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.011</td>
<td>0.017</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>0.113</td>
<td>0.144</td>
<td>0.189</td>
<td>0.254</td>
<td>0.340</td>
<td>0.414</td>
<td>0.437</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Measured</td>
<td>0.023</td>
<td>0.068</td>
<td>0.137</td>
<td>0.167</td>
<td>0.180</td>
<td>0.412</td>
<td>0.465</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textsuperscript{a}The product SOA yield is the mass of product in SOA/mass of alkene reacted. Products are hydroxynitrates (HN), dihydroxynitrates (DHN), trihydroxynitrates (THN), dihydroxycarboxyls (DHC), trihydroxycarboxyls (THC), and products formed by the H-atom abstraction pathway (HAA). Refer to Figure 5.1 for structures of products P1, P2,….
Table D.4

Estimated SOA Yields of Secondary Reaction Products Formed from OH Radical-Initiated Reactions of 2-Methyl-1-Alkenes in the Presence of NO_x.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>alkenes</th>
<th>OH radical addition + H-atom abstraction</th>
<th>H-atom abstraction + OH radical addition</th>
<th>total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>C_9</td>
<td>0.028</td>
<td>0.039</td>
<td>0.067</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C_{10}</td>
<td>0.032</td>
<td>0.045</td>
<td>0.077</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C_{11}</td>
<td>0.035</td>
<td>0.050</td>
<td>0.085</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C_{12}</td>
<td>0.038</td>
<td>0.055</td>
<td>0.093</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C_{13}</td>
<td>0.037</td>
<td>0.060</td>
<td>0.097</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C_{14}</td>
<td>0.029</td>
<td>0.064</td>
<td>0.093</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C_{15}</td>
<td>0.022</td>
<td>0.069</td>
<td>0.090</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*a The product SOA yield is the mass of product in SOA/mass of alkene reacted.*
Figure E.1

Electron ionization mass spectra of (A) 1-nitrooxyhexane, (B) 2-nitrooxyhexane, (C) 1,2-dihydroxytetradecane, and (D) 2-oxoadipic acid standards. Mass spectra A-C are from the Wiley Mass Spectral Database and D was measured by real-time TDPBMS.
Electron ionization mass spectra of (A) 2-hydroxytetrahydrofuran and (B) 3-hydroxytetrahydrofuran standards from the Wiley Mass Spectral Database.
Figure E.3

Electron ionization mass spectra of (A) 5-hydroxytetradecane and (B) 7-hydroxytetradecane standards from the Wiley Mass Spectral Database.